:100 The Performative Hybrid Text As a Feedback Loop Artistic PhD Project by Tale Næss Oslo National Academy of the Arts 2015–2020

Compilation I Artistic Research/Outcome

Forfatter: Tale Næss

Utgiver: Kunsthøgskolen i Oslo

Utgivelsesår: 2020

ISBN 978-82-7038-410-5 (trykt versjon) ISBN 978-82-7038-411-2 (digital versjon)

Design: Martin Asbjørnsen

Trykk og innbinding: 07 Media, Oslo

Opplag: 25 eksemplarer

Papir: Munken Satt i Fournier

Satsen er automatisk generert fra fromonetoahundred.com

Compilation 1 Artistic Research/Outcome

- 1 SOARE (Play)
- 2 SOARE (Radio)
- 3 Corridors and Rooms
- 4 Sweatshop–Aleppo
- 5 Darkness The enemy inside
- 6 The Island
- 7 The City Dwellers Complex

SOARE

One:

Samuel: Yes –

Characters: Samuel - an UAV pilot One – the narrator Anna – a domestic help Rakel – a security guard at a Holiday Inn Hotel Ewo - an unemployed immigrant PROLOGUE One: This is my voice. I'm the one talking. In the evenings. When it's dark. When nobody else is listening. I am talking to the walls, to whoever. I say -It's the garbage -The following lines can be distributed equally among the actors, or performed as suggested Anna: It's the waste. Somebody has to deal with the waste. One: All the leftovers. Anna: The way they pile up. One: And the kids -Anna: Somebody has to take care of the kids. In their beds, One: - in their rooms. Switching the world on and off, switching themselves on and off-A beat

I am the one talking. They say I repeat myself. That I keep saying the same things over and over again, that I keep on returning to the same subjects. That what I say will happen is what is going to happen. That it will go on happening.

Rakel: I'm thinking about unspeakable things –				
Anna: Yes –				
Samuel: It's the echo in the hallways. The taste in my mouth.				
One: Yes –				
Anna: All the stuff piling up.				
Pause				
One: I'm the one talking — Can you hear me? As you walk down the hall. As you pass by the children. As they sleep in their beds — your wife's face then. As you pass by the reception, Rakel. The shopping malls. On the bus, on the way home — the churchyards, the roundabouts. Faster now. Faster. When you go to work. When you walk down the stairs. Walk up the stairs. Prepare yourselves. As you wake up under a bridge —				
Ewo: God its hot.				
One: As you finish that, all that you think should be finished, all those necessary chores – In the kitchen, in the bunker, in the lobby.				
Samuel: Yes –				
One: And you take your turn. And the pilot on the previous shift signs out as you sign in, and you find your seat, and you try to focus. Try to get on with the job. Focus on the screen: The greyness of the landscape. The familiarity of the joystick.				
Short pause				
One: – and you're the only one at the controls now.				
Samuel:				
One: The flickering of the screen /				
Samuel:				
One: - and the landscape you leave behind is a monotonous grey. And the landscape				

— and the landscape you leave behind is a monotonous grey. And the landscape you are facing is a monotonous grey, and you are given the coordinates, and you check the communication satellites, and as you do all that — there is the constant sound from the fluorescent lights, a kind of hissing. The persistence of it sometimes overwhelming. The greyness of the landscape, the everydayness —

those first minutes of the dayshift. And you try to make yourself comfortable and you know what you have to do.

They look at each other.

Samuel:

_

Silence

1.

Rakel:

I arrive at work. The screens are on, and my team takes over. We clock the cameras; – the cameras in the west wing, the cameras in the east wing, the ones covering the reception area, the corridors, the underground parking lot. We make sure that today's footage is safely stored on the hard disc, that all the cameras are operational.

Sometimes it's the dayshift that does your head in and sometimes it's the nightshift: The half-eaten burgers in the bin, doors opening and closing. An alarm going off somewhere, somebody lingering in the stairway for a little bit to long — but nothing really out of the ordinary — as you watch the cameras in the storage room, as you watch the cameras in the corridors on the third floor, as you watch row upon row of closed doors.

Closed doors and that which goes on behind them.

It's at nighttime. At four in the morning maybe, or five — as you sit there with your seventh cup of coffee — that's when your head starts playing games with you. Or you start playing games with your head — these not too healthy games. Just to keep yourself occupied. That's when your mind starts to wander — and you start guessing at things, you start guessing at what goes on inside the rooms, in the beds, in the showers. With the guests.

You see them there.

You imagine them there.

You transport yourself there — as if you through sheer willpower were able to place yourself there with them, in their rooms, in the privacy of their beds where the cameras cannot reach.

You are thinking of unspeakable things.

Short pause

You have observed something, by chance maybe. Earlier in the day: An old man entering the lobby. His tattered suit and shabby shoes. How he pays in cash, not once looking up during the transaction – And there is something about him. Something about the way he walks. Stooped. Something about his scrawny neck, and as the elevator door closes behind him, you imagine him there on his knees, with his belt around his neck, with a pistol in his mouth. Or by the bar: A young Asian girl. Dressed in tight jeans and a slinky white top. Barely seventeen. Or maybe just sixteen. Small-chested, her face like a child's – and the man beside her – heavy built. Older. Italian, or Russian maybe. The way he takes her by the hand, how he pushes her into the elevator, along the corridors – and as soon as the door closes behind them, there is this image in your head. This scene unfolding in your mind and you cannot shake it: The girl on the floor. Her trousers around her legs as an object is forced into her. And then the sound she is making. A whimper. Or less than a whimper – and the hotel has more than a hundred rooms and more than a hundred cameras distributed everywhere, on all sixteen floors, in the basement, in the kitchen, in the elevators – but none of them can take you there. Nothing can take you there - and her face is close to the floor now. She is barely moving, barely breathing - and you know that it isn't real, that it is just an idea in your head as you survey the parking-lot, the main entrance, the reception, the stairway leading down to the reception, the stairway leading down to the kitchen - and as you do all that you still can't help yourself. You still can't stop yourself from thinking about her. You can't help but think that this could be it. This could be

what's happening — This could be what goes on right now, on your watch, while you should be watching — And who could you call? Who should you call? Who could you call to stop it?

Silence

Rakel:

I'm thinking about unspeakable things -

One:

Yes.

Rakel:

About those who are asleep.

About those who cannot sleep.

Lights being turned off and lights being turned on.

The darkness.

A sudden sound.

A TV-set. A child crying. A woman crying.

One:

Yes.

Silence

2.

Anna:

I try not to bother myself with it. I try to take the day as it comes. To get my work done, get everything out of the way. To be there for the kids. Get some dinner organized. Get myself organized. Show up at the language course. Do my homework.

I try to practice.

The language.

I try to practice it as much as I can.

With the kids. With Jo sometimes, if she can be bothered. Whenever I get out of the house. When I take the dog for a walk, like. Or when I'm at the store buying groceries.

Samuel:

I mean –

Anna:

The same stuff, usually.

Samuel:

Why bother.

Anna

- milk, tea, bread, juice. Some butter -

Samuel

What's there to think about.

Anna:

- a lottery-ticket sometimes. Or a magazine.

I try to read, but most of the time I just look at the pictures –

Or when I pick up the mail in the morning. If I meet somebody. Or when I take the kids to school. I park the car and then I wait by the school gate and sometimes one of the parents stop for a chat.

I never smoke in the car.

Samuel: I never smoke in the car. She can't stand the smell. His wife. Samuel: I smoke on the way home. Then I have a shower. We never talk about it. My day. Anna: The parents. The people I work for. Samuel and Jo. They both hate the smell of cigarettes they say, so I might have a quick one by the school gate, or by the kiosk, or on the playground when I take the dog for a walk. Samuel: I mean – these things happen, she says – Anna: She says - these things happen, Samuel - Jo says. She can see it in his eyes and then they do not talk about it. Samuel: That's how it goes. I know that. It comes with the job. It was my assignment. Mine. Mitch started it, Smith took over but I ended it. It was my shift, my turn by the controls, my hand – so to say – on the trigger. Having dinner. Knowing that. Driving home. Stopping for a fag. Taking a shower not to smell – Knowing that. That it was me. Thinking that she should know that too, Jo. That it was me. That I've done that. No feeling of victory. No feeling of hate. A beat I've been pondering over some words lately. Wanting to understand them better maybe. To get to know them better. Samuel: No feeling of hate. No feeling of victory. Words like "mine". Words like "me". The m and the e. The sound of them -Samuel:

.

Anna:

My duty.

Samuel:

No feeling of hate. And I let the dog out.

Short pause

Anna:

I can see them.

I can hear them talk.

I can hear Jo standing in the livingroom.

I can see Samuel opening the door to the garden, letting the dog out.

I can see her standing in the kitchen, counting the silverware. The cutlery. The forks and those big silver spoons. Making sure that it is all there. That nothing

```
is missing.
```

Silence Anna: (despairingly to one of the other actors, to the audience, as if she has a need to defend herself) No! It was not me! I did not do it! I haven't done anything! It was all there when I left! I was out walking the dog! Why do you keep on asking me all those questions? When I was not there? When I was out? When I did not take it? When I could not have taken it! I haven't stolen anything! Silence 3. Rakel: It was early spring. April maybe. Just after Pesach – It was the nightshift. I was doing my round: First the sauna, then the spa, then the swimmingpool. Such a hot night. I was back by the screens. The sound of the air-conditioning, faint steps in the hallway -One: Did you see him? Rakel: No. Or, I had a glimpse of him earlier on. Down by the reception. One: So he's back. Rakel: One: Have you noticed? The way he takes off his gloves? Rakel: One: The way he holds them. Rakel: He came at six. He always comes at six. One: So you waited for him?

One: You saw him.

Rakel:

Rakel:
The dark coat across his arm.
One: And then?
Rakel: Nothing.
A beat
One: He's here. She saw him. She has started to notice things. Like when he arrives and at what time he leaves. What car he drives. A four-wheel drive. Dark blue. How he always parks in the same spot. It's not the things he do, is it? It's how he does it. Considered. Precise. As if all every deed carries the same weight, is of the same vital importance. As if it is the last thing he is going to to do: His hand on the doorknob. The tenseness of his shoulders.
Rakel:
One:
And then; a moment of hesitation, there, before he enters the room. Always the same room. Always the same floor. Everything with such certainty, and then — hesitation. As if he for a second, just for a brief moment, is about to give it up — all of it. The room, the night, what he came for. And you want him to turn around.
Rakel: I want him to turn around.
One: You want him to turn around so you can see his face, – But he never does. And then the moment is over. He enters. He closes the door and he's gone.
Short pause
Ewo: Anna. Look at me. Anna – Turn around and look at me. Turn around so I can see you.
Silence
Rakel (to herself): Turn around. Turn around so I can see you.
Ewo: Anna, turn around and look at me.
That's my girl.
Pause
One: And you know that he will keep the lights on all through the night.
Samuel: Yes.

Short pause

Samuel:

- and the next morning, when I'm ready to go home again -

Rakel:

- and the next morning when I pass by his room, he's already gone. And the girls are doing up his bed as I enter. Just to take a peek. Just a quick peek - and I notice that it hasn't been slept in.

The bed.

It's untouched.

Samuel:

_

Rakel:

The sheets snowy white and tightly stretched across the mattress. And later I find out: No telephones. No pay-TV. No towels on the floor, no water in the shower.

One:

No sleep. No hunger -

Samuel:

- no hate. No victory.

One:

_

Rakel:

What does he do?

What does he do in there?

What does he do with himself all night?

Does he just sit there?

It's these thoughts, these ideas you keep getting – these not so healthy ideas about what goes on behind closed doors, with the guests. Where the cameras do not reach

I see him there. At the edge of the bed. He's not moving. He has not moved for hours. He just sits there. As if he is afraid, afraid of touching anything, afraid of moving. To taint – to bruise – to leave a mark –

Short pause

Rakel:

That's how it started.

I saw him. And then I saw him again. One day I went to his room. I saw the bed all made up — and the sheets — And then I started expecting him. Looking for him. And as he came — always the same day of the month, allways at the same time, in the same car, the same coat, asking for the same room. And I begun tracking through old recordings to see when all this started. How

And I begun tracking through old recordings to see when all this started. How long he'd been coming here. I was looking for his car, his back, his face. And when I found it, I kept on playing it. Kept on playing it over and over again.

Pause

One:

I'm the one talking. When I stop, you listen.

I say:

Anna:

It's the dog.

One:
Anna: Somebody has to take care of the dog.
Rakel: It's his neck.
Anna: It's the kids.
Rakel: All those closed doors –
Ewo: It's this restlessness.
Rakel: – and that which goes on behind them.
Samuel: It's that which can't be undone.
Anna: I am thinking about words like "mine".
Rakel: I'm thinking about my hands, my thighs, the words I speak. The things I do.
Pause
Anna: All that garbage that keeps piling up.
Pause
One: I'm the one talking.
Ewo: They say I keep repeating myself. That I'm going around in circles. That I am h o p e l e s s. Am I hopeless, Anna?
Anna: Yes.
Ewo: In what way am I hopeless?
Anna: Just the way you are.
Ewo: And how am I?
Anna: You. You are mine. My Ewo. You are my Ewo and nobody can change that.

	Anna:
	What are you doing in the kitchen?
	Ewo!
	P
	Ewo:
	_
	Anna:
	I told you not to go there. I told you not to come!
	·
	Ewo:
	_
	Anna: How did you get in anyway?
	Did anybody see you?
	Did anybody see you.
Sho	ort beat
	Ewo:
	I was just getting something to eat. I –
	Anna:
	Who gave you the key?
	Ewo:
	I was hungry.
	Anna:
	I never gave you a key.
	Ewo:
	I was just getting something to eat –
	Anna:
	Close that!
	Close that drawer, Ewo –
A E	peat
	P.
	Ewo:
	Hey –
	Anna:
	I'm counting.
	Ewo:
	What are you doing?
	Anna:
	I'm counting the silverware.
	Ewo:
	Christ!
	Anna:
	I won't have you letting yourself in here. I want you to give me the key. I said
	Tuesday. I said that you could come on Tuesday – when they are out –
	E
	Ewo: But they are out –
	Dut they are out —

```
Anna:
   I told you to call in advance -
   Ewo:
   I missed you.
   Anna:
   Let me see your pockets.
   Ewo:
   It's the truth. I missed you. I couldn't wait.
   It's true, Anna – I wouldn't – I would never. You are the only friend I've got.
   Anna:
   Friend?
   Friend?
   You call yourself a friend? Do you know what they would do if they found you
   here?
Short pause
   Anna:
   Have you been talking to the kids?
   Have you?
   Ewo:
Short pause
   Anna:
   I am here at their mercy.
   Do you know what that means?
   Mercy, Ewo?
   Do you know what kind of life this is?
Short pause
   Anna:
   You're laughing?
   Ewo:
   But Christ – What can they do?
   Anna:
   Ewo:
   Ok – they throw you out.
   They send you out of the country – Is that the worst thing that could happen?
   Is it?
   Or-
   Standing here – counting the cutlery?
   Anna!
   Anna:
   Ewo:
   You would just have to go back - just go back for a few months - then we
   would come up with something new.
   I'm here for you.
```

```
Anna:
   Not this time.
   Just close that drawer!
Pause
   Ewo:
   Anna.
   You are my Anna.
Pause
   Anna:
   No.
   Not now.
   Not here.
   Not like that – Ewo.
   Not this way.
   They can hear us.
   See us.
   If they come down and see us.
   The children -
   They're coming -
   I think they're here -
Silence
                                           5.
   One:
   Anna:
   I'm thinking about my father -
   Ewo (as from another room or another place):
   Anna, what are you thinking about?
   Anna:
   He's at the top of the stairs. I'm hiding in the basement. Behind an old oil
   barrel, in a parking lot. I'm hiding in the bushes and he cannot find me.
A beat
   Anna:
   His face. Bottles of booze. A heap of cardboardboxes. Toxins spilling over on
   the pavement, the endless rows of trailers by the border crossings. Girls waiting
   for what? The smell of gasoline and vomit. My face pushed deep into a
   mattress. His sleep. His toxic intoxicated sleep all boozed up.
   Pigs' blood thick and sticky on the frozen concrete. The slaughter. The
   slaughterhouse. Frozen berries hard as glass. My hands beating, digging,
   scraping at the mud. The language in me still and thick and dark like ink.
   One:
   What more?
   Anna:
   Neon maybe –
   One:
   And?
```

Anna:

Neon and fog. Drizzle. Drizzle resembling gas. Gas all lit up. The world lit up. Everything lit up and Ewo and I in the middle of it. Me and him in the middle of it. Alight. The streets, my teeth, my flesh, the bones inside my flesh, the softness under my fingernails, -

One:

_

Anna:

- me and Ewo. Fleeing. Maybe running, splattering alight. Inside the city. Inside the belly of a big city. Inside the belly of another big city. The rattling of our bones, of our fluorescent skeletons dancing into the dark, hiding under the soiled underbelly of a freight train, crossing another border, then another border and then -

One:

- somewhere

Ewo (as from another room or space):

You can rest now Anna.

Anna:

- somewhere on the outskirts of northern Europe -

Ewo:

You are safe with me.

Look at her little face.

Look at it! Nothing like it in the world – but my Anna. My Anna all lit up –

Anna:

- by the lanterns of the factory, by the firecrackers, by a New Year's Eve I've almost forgot about.

One:

Just like that.

Anna:

Yes – until the light itself dances and dances and dances – like a dead man in the dark.

Short pause

Silence

6.

Samuel:

I mean - what's there to think about?

These things happen. This is what we have been trained for.

It could have happened to anybody – Simon or Smith or – any of the guys – But it was me. I was the one sitting there.

Short pause

Samuel:

I was the one out there.

In my seat.

Watching: Cars on the roads, children on their way to school, the mountains, the mountain-ranges, some barren trees, stretches of sand, a village — Just me maneuvering it as it moves, glides forward, eating miles. Wings twice as wide as a bomber —

One: And you know where you are headed?	
Samuel: Yes.	
One: There is no need to check your orders.	
Samuel: No.	
One: You have been given the coordinates.	
Samuel: Yes.	
One: You've updated the log –	
Samuel:	
One: And you merge with the screen, and the sound of the instruments are bar noticeable now, and your vision narrows as the room disappears, as the so of the instruments tune out, and you just keep on going, almost becoming with the thing out there. The Reaper. Eleven million dollars worth of it.	ound
Short pause	
Samuel: I am the pilot.	
One: It has no pilot.	
Samuel: I'm the one flying it.	
One: You're not flying anything. Your in your seat. You're in the bunker. Samuel –	
Samuel: Hssssh. I am the one flying the damned thing –	
One:	
Short pause	
One: — and your hand is on the joystick and you're mind is out there now, undo merciless sky. That's where your mind is. Your body is in the bunker. It's mind that ties it all together: You, the mission, the thing out there. All full armed. All fully loaded. All loaded up and ready to go.	your
Samuel: Yes –	

	Anna: I'm thinking about unspeakable things –
	Silence A beat
	Samuel: Nothing happens by accidence. The target is given. I know that. You're locked on it. It is all under control, I had it under control. The Sidewinders ready, the Hellfires –
	One: You check the timer: /
	Samuel: 04:26.
	One: — You know the procedure. /
	Samuel: 04:28.
	One: — prepare for the attack: /
	Samuel: 04.32.
Sho	ort pause
,	One: — and then: It all happens at once — the plume of dust. The house it hides, the roof collapsing. A rain of stones, the stones raining, the dust settling. You are looking straight down at it. From the belly of the drone — this gigantic drone — straight down, as if from a cloud — and you see a herd of goats skipping, skirting down the hill and you had no idea that there were so many people in there —
$A \mathcal{L}$	peat
	Samuel: I had no idea they were so many –
	One: A whole family. Seven children.
	Samuel:
•	And there is no sound –
	One: — and once more it strikes you — that lack of sound. You see it as it happens: the plume of smoke, the rain of rocks, the goats running, skidding, skirting down the slope, down into the valley and across the fields before they are settling

hesitantly – but no sound. Then the smoke lifts, the mission is over, the scene is calm again.

That's it: The goats grazing. The roof collapsing – or in the opposite order as you record it, store it on the hard-disc. Document it. It's documentation. Playback-time. Samuel. Playback-time \dots

Samuel:

One:

They look at each other.

Samuel:

Say it.

Say it!

Tell it to me!

Tell it to me like it is. Tell me what really happened!

Tell me what's happening out there!

Silence

Rakel:

Playback-time.

I go through the database. I run through the recordings – just one more time, I say to myself. Just one more time. I am looking for his face – and they ask me – what do you want them for? Those old recordings.

Do you keep them?

The tapes?

Why?

You know that you're not allowed to keep them?

You know that you are not allowed to take them outside the building?

And I say – I'm not taking them anywhere.

And they say – So what is it – that you keep looking at?

Is that somebody you know?

(Rakel, as if talking to herself) So what is it – you keep looking at?

Is that somebody you know?

Pause

Samuel:

And I leave the bunker. And I pick up the car and drive home. And they cover the bodies. The children, seven of them. Small bodies under the sheets — Jo's still at work. I have a smoke in the garden. Anna has left some cold meat on the stove and a jar of gherkins. She pickles them herself.

There is a note under my plate. It's from Jo. It's Tuesday. She always works late on Tuesdays.

There is mustard there too, and some dark rye bread.

I settle by the window. I'm starving. All of a sudden I'm just extremely hungry. And I walk over to the stove and I help myself to some meat and then I help myself to some more.

I bring the jar of gherkins with me and I help myself to one gherkin. And then another.

I'm thirsty. I need a beer. I suck the salty juices off my fingers. Sling a beer down. I keep on eating. Keep on drinking. Straight from the bottle and it has no weight. I watch how the bubbles shoot, shoot through the brown beer from the bottom of the bottle. Shooting their way through the dark malty liquid like tiny, sparkling planets — and as I drink, as I eat, as I sit there by the kitchen window, in my house, looking at my garden, my car, my gate with its high-tech alarmsystem, — I'm still out there. I'm not here, not really. I am out there — doing it — It's happening — and it continues to happen. It keeps on happening —

7.

```
Samuel:
   Anna:
   You're up?
   You found the meat?
   I just came to check the door. I thought I heard something. The alarm isn't on
Samuels sits. He is holding on to the glass of gherkins. He looks at it. It's almost empty.
   Samuel:
   I seem to have eaten all of them.
   Please/help yourself/velbekomme – (or some phrase in her own language)
He hands her the glass and she puts the lid back on.
   Samuel:
   That robe -
   Anna:
   It's Jo's. It's Johanna's.
   Samuel:
   And the slippers -
   Anna:
   She gave them to me.
   Samuel:
She opens the lid. Takes a gherkin.
   Anna:
  Jo said –
   Samuel:
   They're really tasty - those gherkins -
   Anna:
   A bit too sweet –
   Samuel:
   No – they are really nice.
   Anna:
   Too salty.
   Samuel:
   Perfect.
   Anna:
   She's working late.
   Samuel:
   Yes – she left a note under my plate.
   Really tasty.
   Anna: (in a low voice)
```

Thanks.

Short pause

One:

And you do not want to have sex with her.

Anna:

You mustn't think that I –

Samuel:

I don't think anything. What do you think?

What do you think - Anna?

Silence

8.

Rakel:

The back of his head. His neck. His shirt, his hair. In the reception, by the entrance, at the bar.

It's not that I am stalking him. I'm just keeping an eye out. Am I not?

One:

Short pause

Samuel:

Everything happens by accident.

Rakel

It's that noise in my head. A kind of white noise. Filling it.

Samuel:

I'm here and at the same time I'm out there. Hovering over another continent. It would take me days to get there, still that's where I am. Still that's what I'm doing. I'm left at the scene, I'm circling the grey landscape, I'm counting the bodies. You never see the faces you know. They have no faces. They are just silhouettes — The plume of smoke, the roof collapsing, the goats hurdling down the slope —

One:

There he is.

On the 7th floor. In his room.

It's Samuel.

Sitting there on the bed. Unable to move.

Rakel:

And it's late at night and your mind starts to wander and you see him there, in the room he has rented for the night. Always just for one night. He sits on the edge of the bed as if waiting for something, waiting for something to happen. Waiting for someone to come.

Samuel starts to shout. He can say this, or he can say something else:

Samuel:

But I wasn't there!

I wasn't there!

I was here!

I never left. I did not mean to! I didn't -

God! Christ! Fuck! I see them! I see them all the time. I can't see their faces. I want to see their faces! Why can't I see their faces! Turn around! For fuck's

Silence

9.

Quiet

Anna:

I don't know -

Sometimes it feels as if I might grow old in this place.

Like really, really old -

Ewo-

Ewo:

Mhm?

Anna:

Like really, really old. Do you want that? To become like really, really old?

Beat

Anna:

It's lovely up here.

Isn't it lovely?

Lovely to get out of that house.

Don't you think?

Where did you get that car?

Ewo:

It's a friend of mine's.

Short pause

Anna:

Do you remember when we were kids?

Sitting in Jano's basement while the others were up to no good?

His parents were always away.

He had that stick, remember?

We used to just hang out. Watching TV, chucking ice cubes at each other.

We weren't ganging up on them or anything but you wanted that stick, remember? Jano's stick.

What did you want that stick for?

A beat

Ewo:

Take off your blouse.

Anna:

What?

Ewo:

Take it off.

A beat

Anna:

You had this torch.

Ewo:

Nobody can see us.

It was always dark down there.	
·	
Ewo:	
Do it Anna.	
Remember?	
Anna:	
And you refused to use it. The torch.	
Ewo:	
Take it off.	
Short pause	
_	
Ewo:	
Take it off.	
Anna:	
Now?	
	1
The following lines can be shared between Ewo and Anna, or distributed among all the states are sected and awarened.	ne
actors, repeated and swopped	
– Nobody can see us.	
– It was so dark down there.	
You had this torch.	
- Take it off, Anna.	
- Remember?	
– You refused to light it?	
– Just do it. Do it for me Anna.	
- Take it off.	
A beat	
A beat	
A beat Anna:	
Anna:	
Anna:	
Anna: Everything has a beginning.	
Anna: Everything has a beginning. Samuel:	
Anna: Everything has a beginning. Samuel: Nothing happens by accidence. Rakel:	
Anna: Everything has a beginning. Samuel: Nothing happens by accidence.	
Anna: Everything has a beginning. Samuel: Nothing happens by accidence. Rakel: I'm thinking about unspeakable things.	
Anna: Everything has a beginning. Samuel: Nothing happens by accidence. Rakel: I'm thinking about unspeakable things. Ewo:	
Anna: Everything has a beginning. Samuel: Nothing happens by accidence. Rakel: I'm thinking about unspeakable things.	
Anna: Everything has a beginning. Samuel: Nothing happens by accidence. Rakel: I'm thinking about unspeakable things. Ewo: There is no way —	
Anna: Everything has a beginning. Samuel: Nothing happens by accidence. Rakel: I'm thinking about unspeakable things. Ewo: There is no way — Anna:	
Anna: Everything has a beginning. Samuel: Nothing happens by accidence. Rakel: I'm thinking about unspeakable things. Ewo: There is no way —	
Anna: Everything has a beginning. Samuel: Nothing happens by accidence. Rakel: I'm thinking about unspeakable things. Ewo: There is no way — Anna: There is no way —	
Anna: Everything has a beginning. Samuel: Nothing happens by accidence. Rakel: I'm thinking about unspeakable things. Ewo: There is no way — Anna: There is no way — Samuel:	
Anna: Everything has a beginning. Samuel: Nothing happens by accidence. Rakel: I'm thinking about unspeakable things. Ewo: There is no way — Anna: There is no way —	
Anna: Everything has a beginning. Samuel: Nothing happens by accidence. Rakel: I'm thinking about unspeakable things. Ewo: There is no way — Anna: There is no way — Samuel:	d
Anna: Everything has a beginning. Samuel: Nothing happens by accidence. Rakel: I'm thinking about unspeakable things. Ewo: There is no way — Anna: There is no way — Samuel: There is no way I can go back there. The following lines are to be distributed between all the actors, repeated and swopped	Н
Anna: Everything has a beginning. Samuel: Nothing happens by accidence. Rakel: I'm thinking about unspeakable things. Ewo: There is no way — Anna: There is no way — Samuel: There is no way I can go back there. The following lines are to be distributed between all the actors, repeated and swopped — Remember?	A
Anna: Everything has a beginning. Samuel: Nothing happens by accidence. Rakel: I'm thinking about unspeakable things. Ewo: There is no way — Anna: There is no way — Samuel: There is no way I can go back there. The following lines are to be distributed between all the actors, repeated and swopped — Remember? — That —	d
Anna: Everything has a beginning. Samuel: Nothing happens by accidence. Rakel: I'm thinking about unspeakable things. Ewo: There is no way — Anna: There is no way — Samuel: There is no way I can go back there. The following lines are to be distributed between all the actors, repeated and swopped — Remember? — That — — you wanted it.	Н
Anna: Everything has a beginning. Samuel: Nothing happens by accidence. Rakel: I'm thinking about unspeakable things. Ewo: There is no way — Anna: There is no way — Samuel: There is no way I can go back there. The following lines are to be distributed between all the actors, repeated and swopped — Remember? — That — — you wanted it. — You took it from him.	ď
Anna: Everything has a beginning. Samuel: Nothing happens by accidence. Rakel: I'm thinking about unspeakable things. Ewo: There is no way — Anna: There is no way — Samuel: There is no way I can go back there. The following lines are to be distributed between all the actors, repeated and swopped — Remember? — That — — you wanted it. — You took it from him. — Just pitch dark.	Н
Anna: Everything has a beginning. Samuel: Nothing happens by accidence. Rakel: I'm thinking about unspeakable things. Ewo: There is no way — Anna: There is no way — Samuel: There is no way I can go back there. The following lines are to be distributed between all the actors, repeated and swopped — Remember? — That — — you wanted it. — You took it from him. — Just pitch dark. — Take it off, Anna.	d
Anna: Everything has a beginning. Samuel: Nothing happens by accidence. Rakel: I'm thinking about unspeakable things. Ewo: There is no way — Anna: There is no way — Samuel: There is no way I can go back there. The following lines are to be distributed between all the actors, repeated and swopped — Remember? — That — — you wanted it. — You took it from him. — Just pitch dark. — Take it off, Anna. — Do it.	H
Anna: Everything has a beginning. Samuel: Nothing happens by accidence. Rakel: I'm thinking about unspeakable things. Ewo: There is no way — Anna: There is no way — Samuel: There is no way I can go back there. The following lines are to be distributed between all the actors, repeated and swopped — Remember? — That — — you wanted it. — You took it from him. — Just pitch dark. — Take it off, Anna.	Н

10.

Rakel:

There are sixteen floors in this hotel. Fourteen above ground and two underground.

Here, where I am sitting – Here in this control room, I have eleven floors above me.

If this place should tumble. If this place should topple and fall, all eleven floors would land on top of me. Eleven floors, fifty-five rooms in each, the rooftop bar, the outdoor swimming-pool, the gym, the sauna, the sushi restaurant on the 5th floor, the staff, the hired staff, and the guests. Hundreds of them. Maybe a thousand, late at night or on a good weekend.

Pause

Samuel:

Everything happens for a reason.

Anna:

I salted the gherkins. I pickled them in a jar like my mother used to do. He had been working late.

I'd gotten some cold meat out of the fridge for him.

I often did that. When he was working late. Or came home late. Some Tuesdays he didn't come home at all.

I didn't wait up for him. The kids were fast asleep when I heard a noise. I found him by the kitchen window. He was about to finish them off. The gherkins. The whole jar. He had that look on his face. I've seen that look before.

Famished -

Anna comes down the stairs while tying the belt on an old dressing-gown.

Anna:

You're home? I thought I heard something? So this is where you are?

Samuel:

_

Anna:

Did you turn on the alarm?

He stops eating

Samuel:

I seem to be eating all of them. So sorry – I think I was about to finish them off.

She turns away from him, putting the lid back on the jar

Anna:

He asks me about the robe — (to Samuel) It's Jo's.

Samuel:

And the slippers?

Anna:

She gave them to me.

```
Anna:
   She said -
   She's working late.
   She's -
Short pause
   Anna:
   I'll get the alarm going.
   Samuel:
   There is no need.
   If anybody tries to get in – We'll just put the dogs on them.
   Anna:
   I think we should -
   Samuel:
   Wait.
   Wait. Stay.
   Anna:
   Samuel:
   Let's just talk.
   Stay - Let's just talk - just talk for a moment.
   How long have you been with us?
   Anna:
   Samuel:
   Here.
   Anna:
   One and a half year.
   Samuel:
   That's nice.
   That's really great.
   And before - what did you do before?
   Anna:
   Samuel:
   That's not a complicated question is it?
   What's the problem? I just asked you the simplest of questions –
   What did you do before you came to us? Did you have a good time -
   Christ! I'm just trying to make conversation here -
   Can't you just tell me what you did before?
   Anna:
   Samuel:
   But for fuck's sake? What's wrong with you? Talk to me!
   Are you just going to stand there?
```

```
Anna:
   I just think we should -
   Samuel:
   What!
   What is it that we should?
   What is it that – Don't just stand there!
   Anna (in a low voice):
   I should really get that alarm going.
Pause
   One:
   And he stops her.
   And she stands there.
   And he walks over to the refrigerator. And he takes out another bottle of beer.
   And he drinks it.
   Or he does not drink it.
   And he just stands there.
   And she just stands there.
   And he lifts the bottle and then he throws it, and the bottle hits the wall.
   And he grabs another bottle. And he smashes it against the wall.
   And he grabs another.
   And it smashes against the wall like the last one.
   And then another.
Anna starts picking up the broken glass.
   Samuel:
   Anna.
   Anna:
   Samuel:
   I'm sorry.
   Anna:
   Samuel:
   Stop that.
   Get up.
   Get up!
She gets up
   Samuel:
   Come here.
   Sit down.
   Just sit down. Let's talk.
   Let's just talk for a little.
   It's none of my business. I know. What you did before. It's none of my business
   Anna:
   Samuel:
   And your parents?
   What did they do for a living?
```

Anna: They had pigs. Short pause And another One: And Jo comes home. And you feel like making love to her. And you try to make love to her, but you are not able to. And she says: Samuel: I know where you've been. I know what you're up to. Why you keep on disappearing like that. You must be aware of the fact that I -One And you say: Samuel: You mustn't believe that – I haven't – One And -Samuel: You must know that I never would -One And she says: Samuel: I don't believe anything. One

And she says:

Samuel:

What do you believe in?

What do you believe in Samuel?

She says – Samuel.

She says - Samuel

Samuel.

Samuel

Samuel

Samuel

Samuel

Silence

11.

Rakel:

It's nighttime. I'm just sitting here. Waiting. That's when your mind starts to wander - That's when you start playing this game, this not too healthy game to pass the time mostly – trying to guess what goes on, try to imagine what could be going on behind those closed doors, inside the rooms where the cameras cannot reach.

I imagine him there.

On the bed.

By the window. On the floor. Straight out like a corpse. Still wearing his suit, his gloves, his shoes. Still breathing. Just lying there. Staring at the ceiling.

He has a ring in his pocket. It's a wedding ring. He picks it up, puts it in his mouth. Puts it on his finger. Looks at it. Hides it in his fist.

Clenches it. And afterwards. An hour later maybe – In the bathroom – The water filling the sink, filling it to the brim, pouring over the edges, onto the floor, onto his feet, into the room, soaking the carpets, wetting the skirting-boards, the wallpaper, and it continues to flow –

One:

Yes.

Rakel:

- and there is nobody there to see it.

And there is nobody there to stop it.

And there is nobody there to talk to, there is nothing I can do about it.

One

No.

They look at each other

Rakel:

It's just a thought but it's there and I can't stop thinking about it.

I want to be there with him.

I want to go up to his room and be there.

To stand with him in the wall of water.

In my mind it's there. Do you get it. It's as real as anything –

You're being silly, I say to myself. This is silly. This indecisiveness — and then he leaves, he's gone. And I go up to his room again. I talk to the maids again and they let me in. And the room is dry. Everything's in place. Untouched. The sheets tightly stretched across the mattress, and I put my hand on it. On the coolness of the sheets. And I place myself in the chair where he might have been sitting. And I lie on the floor where he may have been lying. And I search for his warmth there, but I cannot find it.

No waste in the bin.

The room's empty in a lurid way, as if nobody had ever been there: The bed, the nightstand, the navy-blue wall-to-wall carpet woolly and dry against my hand.

Pause

A beat

Anna:

It's the dirt.

It's the filth.

It's the filth, or it was the filth -

Somebody has to get rid of it.

The way it mounts up.

Short pause

Anna:

It's the living room.

The furniture.

Broken glass all over the kitchen floor.

Splatters of beer running down the kitchen walls — and I fill the bucket with hot water, and I open the cupboards and I look at all the different types of detergents. Bottles of polish, bottles of soap and bleach. Not very different from those we had at home. They are even in the same place. There. Under the sink. All filling the same purpose, the same smell, just different labels: one for the sink, one for the stove, one for the tiles in the bathroom.

One:

I am the one talking.

Can you hear me?

Can you hear me talking to you? At nighttime. When it's quiet. When it's dark.

I talk to the will in you - Samuel - standing there, watching the beer as it trickles down the walls. Watching Anna as she bends down, as she cleans up after you.

Watching Jo beside you in your big bed as you push your hand between her thighs, as you kiss the kids before they go to school, as you drive to work. As you stop. As you stand there with the engine running. As you leave it. The car. As you walk into a field purposelessly. As you take a cigarette. As you forget to come home, to shower. As you forget to get up. What's there to get up for? As you check in at a big hotel downtown, and it's so hot and it's not the first time you are there. It's not the first time you check yourself in. And you lose yourself in the corridors, in the sheer space of the place.

Always the same hotel.

Always the same room, the same insomnia. The night guard passing by your door. His or her steps as he or she stops, stands there. Listening maybe. Stands there outside your door -

Short pause

One:

You wait.

You check your watch -

Samuel:

It is -

One

04:26.

Samuel:

04:28.

One

04.32.

Continued by One or this part could be distributed among One, Anna, Samuel and/or Rakel

The roof collapsing, the stones cascading, the dust settling, a herd of goats skidding, leaping, hurdling down the hill -

It never ends.

This is how it's going to be.

This is how it is.

Short pause

One:

Samuel -

Turn around. Turn around and look at me.

A beat

In the kitchen with Anna

Samuel:

Stand up, Anna!

Long pause

One

But she does not listen and she does not answer and that's when the children

open the kitchen door and you realize that you have been shouting. That you have been shouting out her name. That you have been shouting for a while — because the eldest, your four year-old daughter keeps covering her ears with her hands and you realize that you are shaking, that you are shaking her — and you let go of her, you let go of Anna and you look at your daughter and you look at her and you can see a streak of blood under her nose and a spike of bottle-coloured glass stuck in her cheek —

A beat

Ewo:

What is it?

What's on your mind, Anna?

Anna:

I slept with the goats you know. Sometimes. I slept there. With the animals.

One

What's on your mind Anna?

Ewo:

That's what's on her mind as he takes the children out of the room, as she wipes the beer off the walls, as she wipes the blood off her cheek. She is thinking about the goats. The smell of them. The warmth of their bodies. The yellow gleam of their eyes. The warmth of the goats milk fresh in her mouth on grey, icy, Ukrainian mornings.

Short silence

Samuel:

I'm crossing the lawn.

I can't find my shoes?

My wife is watching from the bedroom window.

She's there. Watching me.

I've taken off our wedding ring. It's in my mouth.

I'm light as a feather.

Ewo:

It's Tuesday.

It's our day.

They shouldn't be home.

The cars in the drive. The alarm's off.

I can see her through the kitchen window. Crouching down. Rubbing the walls, wiping them down, and there is a hatred in me. Or anger. I do not know which

Turn around, Anna.

Turn around and look at me!

A beat

One:

And Ewo pushes his face against the window as Anna keeps wiping the the wall. Sitting on the floor all covered in broken glass.

A beat

One:

He is leaning his forehead against the window.

Samuel is barefoot in the grass.

A short beat

Samuel:

What are you doing here?

Ewo: What I'm doing here? Samuel: Sit. Don't move. Ewo: Hey! Wait! Wait. I can explain. I'm a friend of Anna's. She knows me. She asked me to come. You can just talk to her. Why are you looking at me? Why are you looking at me like that? Stop looking at me like that! Samuel: Ewo: I had no idea you were at home -I - Ok - just do it.Go ahead. Just turn the dogs on me. Silence Rakel: It's at night. That's when you get these ideas. These silly ideas in your head and you turn yourself into an eye. You become this eye. You move about, up and down the corridors, you hover over the bar – enter the rooms, sit by the beds and nobody can see you. It's Tuesday. Past midnight. Room 703 is dark. I'm waiting. He should have been here by now. Where is he? Why isn't he here? Samuel is watching Anna. Ewo is watching Anna Samuel: Look at her. Look at her. How long do you think she'll go on doing that? Ewo:

Samuel:

She'll just keep on doing it, won't she? She'll just keep on wiping those walls for as long as it takes. She'll keep on going at it until everything is back in its place. Until there isn't a trace, until it's all cleaned up.

Pause

One:

Ewo gets up. Anna's hair keeps falling into her eyes, hair dark at the roots. Samuel has no shoes on.

He's just out there walking. The wedding ring is in his mouth, at the tip of his tongue. He is about to swallow it. He stops. He is talking to Ewo. This is his garden. His house. He is considering letting the dogs loose on him. He stands there. All sober now. Smelling of gherkins and beer.

12.

One:

Samuel crosses the lawn.

Jo closes the curtains.

Anna wraps the broken glass in an old newspaper.

Ewo gets up.

The car is in the drive. The engine is on. The key is in the ignition.

Ewo is by the veranda door. He opens it.

Anna:

What are you doing here?

One:

He does not answer. He says:

Ewo:

You are my Anna. You're my girl and nothing is going to change that.

Short pause

One:

Samuel crosses the lawn. He gets into the car. Sits there. He's not wearing any shoes. He steps out of the car. Leaving the keys in the ignition. He walks, just walks out the garden gate as Anna turns off the lights in the kitchen and Ewo is left in the dark.

Rakel pours herself another cup of coffee.

She starts talking to herself, – and the hotel is a huge body harboring a thousand mouths and a thousand eyes. Harboring sinks and doors and locks – And Samuel walks through the suburbs, stops a taxi as it passes. Does not think. He is out otside the hotel now. He enters the lobby. Still barefoot, his shirt all wet from beer and sweat.

He does not have his wallet.

He passes the camera to the left, he enters the camera to the right, and Rakel is looking at her hand. At the cup. At her coffee. She does not see him. His face grimy.

Ewo:

They say that I repeat myself. That I am moving in circles. That I am hopeless?

Am I?

AIII 1:

Am I Anna?

Anna:

Yes.

Ewo:

In what way am I hopeless?

Anna:

The way you are.

What you are like.

Ewo:

And what am I like?

Anna:

You're Ewo.

You're my Ewo and nothing's going to change that.

Silence

One:

He's in the elevator. He's in the stairway. He takes the fire exit. He's crouching down in an ironing cupboard. It's too hot in there, isn't it? It's only you there, isn't it Samuel?

Beat

One:

And Rakel finishes her coffee. She reaches for her bag. It's time to go home. He's not coming. It's time to take the subway. It's raining. She takes the stairs. She enters her flat without turning on the lights. Gets undressed in the dark. Among her belongings, among all that which belongs to her. She keeps her socks on. That's all. Stands there in the light from the aquarium. She does not turn the radio on. She does not turn on the TV. She stands in the light from the refrigerator. She is eating a hot dog straight from the can. She does not bother to heat it. She is leaning her forehead against the icebox. Her eye is translucent. It's a gateway and the gateway needs no crossing. It's as wide open as Rakel herself.

Silence

Rakel:

I'm in my room. I'm in the living room. Surrounded by my belongings, my stuff. I'm there in the dark. I'm standing in the dark flipping through a magazine and I can feel it — He's —

One:

I'm so close now.

I'm right behind you.

Rakel:

And I am trying not to notice. It's nothing. I'm just being silly.

One:

And she is trying not to notice. Not to be silly.

Rakel:

I'm in the kitchen. I open the refrigerator.

One:

A half-empty cup of yoghurt on the top shelf. A can of coffee beans, a piece of cheese, old and yellow and stale.

Rakel:

I can feel him – there. It –

One:

I'm closing in on her and she knows it. She awaits it. I'm here. I'm in her room. Right now I'm nowhere else. I touch her. I reach out and I touch her back and it is hard as glass.

It's silent.

All is silent for a little longer.

Pause

One:

I'm the one talking. Listen -

Not a sound, – and Anna looks at Ewo, and Ewo says:

```
Ewo:
   I promise you, Anna.
   I promise you.
   I'll take you away from this place. I'll take you somewhere great.
Short pause
   One:
   It's dawn.
   This night will soon be over.
   The live screens lights up as Rakel is back behind the screens.
   Rakel:
   I can't sleep. I'm facing the screens. I can envision it all. Every room. Everyone
   asleep in their rooms – but he isn't there. He must be somewhere. In the
   elevator, by the stairs, he is hiding in the ironing cupboard. He's on his back
   now – His hands stretched out. He resembles a beggar, a crucified, himself.
   There is blood on his shirt – he is not wearing any. He makes me think of a big
   dog. A big bleeding dog. A horse left out in the rain.
   That's what I see. That's what I make myself imagine.
   I can see him there.
   I see -
   One:
   But the room is still empty.
   Room 703. Locked. She's -
   Rakel:
   -looking-
   One:
   She -
   Rakel:
   - says
   One:
   I.
Short pause
   Rakel:
   He's pacing the room -
   He's wearing a suit -
   He's undressed -
   He's waiting for somebody. The suitcase on his bed is full off stuff, it's empty.
   By the door a shotgun. On the nightstand a bible.
   One:
   She glances from one camera to the other. His room is still empty.
   Rakel:
   He's nowhere -
   He's not to be seen -
   He should have been there.
   A chill runs down her spine. A nibbling little flame – and she starts turning off
   the cameras. Camera one, camera six, camera hundred and eighteen. And Anna
```

Anna:

says:

Never mind.

	, Ewo.
One:	
And the trai	fic keeps building up in the roundabout, bumper to bumper down
	eet as Rakel turns off camera two hundred and twelve and two
hundred and	
Rakel:	
Yes.	
Ewo:	
Did you see	his face?
•	to see his face?
Anna:	
Who's face:	
Ewo:	
	ou are working for? As he left?
	talking about goats?
One:	
While Rake	l turns off camera three hundred and twenty one and three hundred
and twenty-	-
Anna:	
Yes.	
_	
Ewo:	
	ve been drunk.
	ve been drunk.
He must ha	
He must hav Anna: I don't thinl	
He must hav	x so.
He must hav Anna: I don't thinl Ewo:	x so.
He must hav Anna: I don't thinl Ewo: He had no s	k so. hoes on —
He must hav Anna: I don't thinl Ewo: He had no s One: Rakel waits.	k so. hoes on —
He must have Anna: I don't thin! Ewo: He had no so One: Rakel waits. She watches	k so. hoes on — s the darkened screens.
He must have Anna: I don't thinle Ewo: He had no so One: Rakel waits. She watches It is soon da	k so. hoes on –
He must have Anna: I don't thin! Ewo: He had no so the waits. She watches It is soon dathere.	hoes on – s the darkened screens. wn. Yet another hour before the next shift. She's the only one
He must have Anna: I don't thin! Ewo: He had no so One: Rakel waits. She watches It is soon dathere. She takes ou	hoes on – s the darkened screens. wn. Yet another hour before the next shift. She's the only one
He must have Anna: I don't thin! Ewo: He had no so One: Rakel waits. She watches It is soon dathere. She takes ou	hoes on — s the darkened screens. wn. Yet another hour before the next shift. She's the only one ut her keys.
He must have Anna: I don't thin! Ewo: He had no so the had no so the watches It is soon dathere. She takes ou She's ready	to be the darkened screens. The wn. Yet another hour before the next shift. She's the only one at her keys. To leave it all behind as Ewo gets into Samuel's car.
Anna: I don't thinl Ewo: He had no s One: Rakel waits. She watches It is soon da there. She takes ou She's ready Anna: Are you sur	to be the darkened screens. The wn. Yet another hour before the next shift. She's the only one at her keys. To leave it all behind as Ewo gets into Samuel's car.
He must have Anna: I don't thin! Ewo: He had no so the watches It is soon dathere. She takes ou She's ready Anna:	to be the darkened screens. The wn. Yet another hour before the next shift. She's the only one at her keys. To leave it all behind as Ewo gets into Samuel's car.
Anna: I don't thinl Ewo: He had no s One: Rakel waits. She watches It is soon da there. She takes ou She's ready Anna: Are you sur	to be the darkened screens. The wn. Yet another hour before the next shift. She's the only one at her keys. To leave it all behind as Ewo gets into Samuel's car.
He must have Anna: I don't thin! Ewo: He had no so the watches It is soon dathere. She takes out She's ready Anna: Are you sur Ewo:	the darkened screens. wn. Yet another hour before the next shift. She's the only one at her keys. to leave it all behind as Ewo gets into Samuel's car. e.
Anna: I don't thinl Ewo: He had no s One: Rakel waits. She watches It is soon da there. She takes ou She's ready Anna: Are you sur Ewo: — Anna:	the darkened screens. wn. Yet another hour before the next shift. She's the only one at her keys. to leave it all behind as Ewo gets into Samuel's car. e.

One:

As Rakel opens the door.

She's inside.

This is room 703.

I'm there with her.

It smells of – nothing. Dust and detergent.
Silence
Rakel: Yes.
One: She sits down on the bed.
Rakel: Yes.
One: I'm there beside you.
Rakel:
One: You can feel my warmth.
Rakel: No.
One: But you know I'm here?
Silence
Rakel:
Short pause
One: What do you see?
Rakel: The bathroom door's ajar. A shower, a toilet, a towel by the sink. Grey tiles.
One: What do you see?
Rakel: The TV set. The window. The view of the park.
One: And you walk over to the window?
Rakel: Yes.
One: And we are standing there?
Rakel: The lawn scorched by the sun. The park desolate. The grass covered by dead leaves and it hasn't rained for days, months maybe.

And you wish that it could rain -

Rakel:
How I wish it would rain again.
One:
What else?
Rakel:
The newspaper-stand on the corner is about to open. A woman approaches the
hotel. She is pushing a pram. She's followed by two small children.
One:
And you turn away.
And you turn on the television set.
There is no signal.
All the screens in the world are lit up, and this one has no signal.
The sheets, cold and dead beneath your hands.
Rakel:
And then?
One:
He's not here.
This is not where you will find him.
You get that now – And you leave the room. You close the door behind you
and then you see him. Standing. At the end of the corridor.
Barefoot. Gloves on his hands. Beer spilled all over his pale blue shirt.
Samuel:
_
Rakel:
Is this your room?
Samuel:
_
Rakel:
Can't you find it? Your room?
It's this one, isn't it?
,
Samuel:
_
Rakel:
Isn't this were you stay?
Samuel:
Rakel:
Are you staying in this hotel? If you're not staying in this hotel you shouldn't
If you're not staying in this hotel you shouldn't –
Samuel:
I usually —
p.1.1
Rakel: — then I might have to call /
— then I might have to can /
Samuel:

I can't -

Rakel: Off course you can – but if you are not a guest here then I am afraid I have to – You'll have to leave the premises – Or you need to book a room – Have you booked a room?
Samuel: I've left my wallet.
Rakel:
Samuel: I have no money. I didn't take my card – I can't. I can't do it. I can't be – I can'do my job anymore. – I can't do this – I need to see their faces – There is no way I can do this, and my kids – There is just no way – No way I could –
Beat
Rakel: Ok. I hear you. Wait.
One: And I hold his arm as if he was a child. And the door to room703 closes behind them and Anna says:
Anna: Ewo, Ewo, Ewo – where are you taking me?
One: And the light is dim. In the hallway there is a sound. A sharp bang, maybe. Or a clutter. As if something just toppled over inside one of the rooms. As if someone just fell to the floor. And then a hush of welling water. As if the room was suddenly afloat with it. As if the room was about to break at its seams. And the television is on. All of a sudden, as if in a flash, all the hotel's hundreds, maybe thousands of television-sets light up, and Rakel holds Samuel by the arm.
Rakel: I am holding his arm as if he was a child.
Samuel: Rakel.
One: She is holding his arm as if he was a child
Rakel: Samuel —

Pause

One: (as if starting all over)

Samuel – the watch he wears, the whiteness of his underarms, the shirt, his socks, his back – not especially broad, not especially muscular. Those narrow hips, the inside of his knees, the way he bends down to pick up a newspaper, the way he undresses – We know it by now. These movements. The way he takes off his shirt – not fast – not slow. There beside her. Crying maybe. Or totally still, lying on his back like a dead person.

The way he never turns around to look at me. $\,$

```
Rakel:
   Turn around and look at me.
   - not until it's over.
   Beat
   Samuel:
   That is what I do.
Pause
   Rakel:
   And I can't help pondering upon words like "mine". On words like "me". On
   expressions like "my duty", "my responsibility".
   Samuel:
Beat
   Anna:
   Who's going to look after the children?
   When I'm gone - who's going to look after the children?
   One:
   And I'm in the car with her and I'm holding her arm like a child.
   Ewo:
   Are you hungry?
   Anna:
   No
   Ewo:
   Youre hungry.
   Anna:
   Don't stop
He stops
   Let's get something to eat!
   One:
   And its hot
The city underneath them hidden in a vibrating, luminous haze – and Ewo says:
Ah – Isn't it better up here?
   Anna:
   Great to be out of that house
   Ewo:
   Isn't it great? Just great to be up here -
   We shouldn't have taken that car
   Ewo:
   He'll get it back. I'll get it back to him.
```

I don't know –

One: Jo's with the children. She is outside the hotel. She is at the hotel. The kids are playing in the lobby. And Anna and Ewo sits at a bench, high up in the hills by a petrol station. Anna's restless. I'm there with her. Ewo is outside, fueling up the car, as Anna says:
Anna: Did you say something?
Rakel: No.
Anna: I thought you said something?
Ewo: I'm just getting a coffee and a bun. You?
One: And Ewo takes a bite of her pancake and the sun is rising now – low and orange as it stretches lazily across the tarmac, across the slick black bonnet of the car and in one brief second everything is alight, the bumpers, the rearview mirror, the headlights, the horizon, Anna's face flaring up, silvery and bright – and Anna says:
Anna: Isn't it great here? Wasn't it great to get out of that house? We should not have taken that car?
Ewo:
Anna: We –
Ewo: The car is fine
Anna: How fast is it?
Ewo: 210 km – 220 –
Anna: Not faster?
Ewo: 250 maybe?
One: And she knows they cannot stay there.
Anna:

You cannot stay here. Anna: I don't know -Ewo: One: Time's running out. And I'm sitting right beside them. Anna: I don't know -Ewo: Anna: I think we should leave. Ewo: It's fine. It's fine, Anna – I promise. We're leaving in a minute. Anna: I think we should be off now. Ewo: I'll just finish my coffee.

Short pause

One

Anna and Ewo.

Jo and her children.

Samuel and Rakel.

A sixteen-story hotel.

The following passage can be divided between the characters as suggested or be shared randomly among them. It can also be performed partly or as a whole choir sequence

One:

This is what we believe in

This is what we will continue to believe in.

This is what we got.

Rakel turns off the tv.

Samuel rests his head in her lap – and down in the basement, water starts seeping through the foundations, forcing its way through the sediments, trickling through the insulation, breaking through the vents, the sockets, the outskirts of pipes, along the cracks and the skirting boards.

Just dampness at first.

Soaking everything.

A feeling. Just a feeling – Then it's there.

The water, the force of it, the pressure of it. As it breaks through, pours in, seeping into the carpets, the linen, the dirty sheets in the wicker baskets in the washroom, the grey heaps of laundry on the basement floor. And it keeps on coming. And it keeps on rising. Up the staircase, covering stacks of chairs and discarded shelves at the backside of the parking lot. Washing with it lightbulbs and radios and dvd-players. Wine-lists and napkin holders and old menus. Rising up along the basement walls and spilling onto the ground floor, soaking the soft brown carpet in the hotel lobby, pushing up the elevator shafts, filling the elevators, and bursting out through the doors on the first floor where it

spurts, brown and murky over the newly waxed floorboards into the breakfast area.

Sunny streets.

A traffic-jam over by McDonalds. Cars honking their horns by the malfunctioning traffic-lights.

A hot breeze blowing through the park.

Dry leaves adrift across the lawn. Pushing onwards as the wind pushes it along the tarmac on the other side, as an UAV takes off. Fully armed.

This is what we believe in.

This is what we know: Ewo chewing on a bun.

Samuel's head in Rakel's lap.

And Rakel turns on the TV again. She turns to a channel showing nature programs: Zebras, savannahs, killer whales.

And the water is filling the hotel basement

the kitchen

where pots and pans are floating alongside cabbages and cooking utensils, bottles and washing-up liquid, packets of sweet peas, parcels of plastic forks and plastic spoons, containers with offcuts and cold meat. And the water fills the plumbing

pours out of the hundreds of toilets and the washbasins on the first floor spurting from showerheads and bathroom drains

And the debris washes across the marbled floor

pushes its way through the corridors

where the surveillance cameras shortcut

past the control room

where the computers shortcut

and there are people in the doorways

pushing against each other

and the doors -

Who locked the doors!

Why are the doors locked!

Pause

One:

This is my voice.

I am the one talking.

When it's quiet – when there is nobody there to listen – and Rakel says:

Rakel:

What do you believe in?

Do you believe in anything?

and a deer lowers its head to drink

Do you believe in anything at all, Samuel?

A beat

One:

And the UAV is heading for the northern provinces of Aghanistan, the southern parts of Somalia, the western parts of Angola.

And the sun beats down on the scorched grass in the park as the traffic jam slows and jilts, edging its way past the hotel, past the H&M, trickles into the alleys – and the fallen leaves lift for a moment as the wind sweeps them up in one swift movement pushing them on to the curve and onwards spiraling red and ocher.

And the lights go out all the lights are out the only light there is the flickering blue from the TV-screens across the white leather sofa in a private suite across the pink bedspread in a room for one across the king-sized bed in a double

```
and the riverbeds are running like dried-out veins across the Afghan provinces
Rakel:
It hasn't rained all summer. How I wish it would rain.
One:

    as eight Afghan women herd their goats along the dried-up creeks carrying

piles of brittle wood on their back
And Ewo says:
Ewo
Are you ready?
One:
And the water has reached the second floor now and it's still rising /
I'll show you how fast it can go.
- and it will keep on rising
as it floods the breakfast restaurant
lifts the chairs, the tables, tear to pieces the flower arrangements all ready and
waiting for the evening banquet
sweeping with it a dozen teak tables as it reaches the grand dining room on the
third floor
as it reaches the bar
its mirrored surfaces
its glass shelves filled with bottles of booze
bottles of wine
bottles of soda water
and the pressure rises
and it reaches the glass wall leading into the conference area
and the glass breaks
and the wall bursts
and as it collapses, cascades of broken glass spurt, fall and sink to the floor
great piles of shards of glass, bottles, cutlery, chairs - and through this broken
landscape drift the floating bodies
One by one at first
then in pairs
and soon there are hundreds of them
face up
face down
like sleepers
sinking to the floor as if the hotel is a gigantic ship about to keel over.
This is how it goes. The water will keep on rising until the room is full, until
the room is bursting with water
cracking, sighing, shaking
as the pressure mounts
as the doors burst open
the doors burst open and torrents of water start thundering along the corridors
carrying with them suitcases and bags
hairbrushes and makeup-kits, toys and old train sets, condoms and diapers and
bundles of last week's newspapers
while Jo runs down the corridors
pushing her way amongst the panicking crowds
she can't find her girl
the girl with the brown coat
holding her oldest girl by the hand
carrying the youngest on her hip
She does not shout
She isn't making a sound
The baby isn't making a sound
They have their eyes on the elevator
```

Their eyes on the target /

Anna.

Faster! Make it go faster!

One

— and in the park, the grass is yellow and brittle from the lack of rain, the ground cracked, all dried out along the foundations of the multi-story hotel complex where the windows on the ground floor, the windows on the first floor and the windows on the second floor are about to burst open as the windows on the 3rd and 4th floor are about to burst open as the building is about to get filled with water

On the 6th floor

where the lights from the television sets are still flickering as the water reaches the 5th

and on the 7th Samuel is resting his head in Rakel's lap

and there is a trembling

a murmur

from underneath their feet

from the ceiling

the inside of the walls

and they can hear how the building shakes and sighs

and Rakel just sits there watching the screen

watching the hummingbirds

a baby giraffe being born

a baby zebra being born

a baby zebra fleeing a lion attack

a hyena attack

the dust pluming around its feet

the blood in the sand

the fear in its eyes

and the water engulfs the cameras in the west wing

soon the whole hotel will be flooded

as it pushes up the elevator shafts

as the walls crumble

as the walls get skinned, leaving the wallpaper drifting in dark gigantic sheets

covered with subtropical flowers

and Jo is running now

she has lost her oldest

and her girl in the little brown coat

she is clinging on to her youngest

as she has left her safe stand by the elevator

as she is forced by the crowds unto the staircase

further and further up

away from the water

away from the screams and the shouting

up to this creepy silence

and as she walks

the wall of water follows

and as she opens the door to the staircase leading on to the floor above this one

the water is there

waiting for her

thundering over her as an avalanche

as a wall of dark green glass

as it collapses over her

as she stands inside it

holding onto her baby

as the baby gets ripped out of her hands

as the pram gets ripped out of her hands

and Rakel is watching a pelican take flight – an eagle take flight – an albatross take flight and a UAV crosses the sky leaving behind a pale white trace across

the bright blue and Samuel says:

Samuel:

_

One:

- as the windows on the ground floor burst open as the windows on the first floor burst open as the windows on the second floor burst open as the windows on the third floor burst open and the water spurts out of them, falls in cascades along the building's shiny surfaces showers the air waters the earth and the withered grass washes over park benches awakes the sleeping homeless drenches the shoepolishers and the dogowners wets the dusty wings of a flock of sparrows and the earth drinks it up and the stone hard ground becomes wet and dark and from somewhere deep down the water starts to pull upwards into roots and stems into budding branches a violent burst of green

(Tale Næss, Oslo, 2015)

S O A R E – a radio play

S O A R E (a radio play) is based on the play with the same name

Characters:

Samuel – an UAV pilot One – the narrator Anna – a domestic help

Rakel – a security guard at a Holiday Inn Hotel

Ewo - an unemployed immigrant

Other:

Hannah

Colleague 1 and colleague 2

A hotel-receptionist

PROLOGUE

One:

Can you hear me?
Can you hear me talking
At night
when it is quiet
when it is dark and nobody else is there to listen
I am talking about/

Anna: the garbage It is the garbage We have to get rid of it It just piles up And the kids/

One

somebody has to take care of the kids.

Hannah:

Could you watch the dog for a moment?

One:

They say that I am repeating myself

That I keep going in circles

That I keep repeating the same words, circling the same events

Ewo:

Yes

One:
I am the one talking
As Anna passes you in the hallway
Samuel:
Yes
One:

runs to get the milk, the paper, the mail

Walks past your bedroom

Anna:

Yes

One:

When Rakel arrives at work Takes the elevator up Takes the elevator down Settles by her desk Checks the camera to the right The camera to the left

When Ewo awakes under a bridge

Ewo:

Christ, it's hot!

One:

When he takes off his shirt His socks, his pants and wades into the river Stands there, knee deep in water

When you get yourselves ready, Samuel On your drive there To the bunker As you take the elevator down There, in that mundane, everyday arrival

A door slams shut

Samuel:

Yes

One:

When you take over the nightshift and the others hands in the report and you fill in the forms and you settle there in front of the screens trying to focus trying to find the right focus as you take over put your hand on thee lever Ready?

Samuel:

- Ready

One:

And it is all up to you now there by the flicker from the screen, it is all up to you as the landscape passes by and you. check the communication-satellites get hold of the coordinates and the hissing sound of the fluorescent lighting overwhelms you

just for a moment just overwhelmed you, as they always do in the beginning And you try to focus and you know that the mission is already on its way. Now it is up to you to finish it Samuel: And I sit there And I watch it and the only thing moving is the machine there, the landscape under it: mountain-ranges, cedar trees cars on the roads a bunch of houses grouped together children on their way to school Life that goes on as life goes on One: And you know what kind of mission this is Samuel: Yes And all you have to do is follow the instructions Keep an eye on the coordinates Update the log Samuel: And me and the screen become one All sounds disappear The room disappear as we fly, hunt, float onwards and onward – One: And it is as if you no longer are in thus room You are out there you are connected to the drone, to what it wants to what it is doing out there as the target is given as you focus on it Ready? Samuel: Ready One: Are you ready? Samuel: And you check the timer Samuel: O4:26 One: As you follow the procedure

Samuel: 04:28

One

As you start the attack

Samuel:

04:32

One:

Check the missile as it is launched As it moves towards the target As everything goes according to plan As it hits

The plume of dust The house imploding The roof as it collapses

The dust as it settles – a rain of stones and a herd of goats leaping down the

steep

And you have no idea, have you

Samuel:

I have no idea –

One:

You have no idea how many people there were in that building

And there is no sound

It hits you again how strange it is that there comes no sound with these images the rain of stones

the heard of goats scattering across the hill

Short pause – a beat

Rakel:

When I arrive

When the one who has done the nightshift logs out - and we. synchronize the cameras, makes sure that the footages is stored and registered all the cameras operational – then it is just me

Me and the screens

Sometimes the first hours seem to last forever: the half-eaten burger in the bin doors opening doors closing An alarm going off a shadow in the stairwell

Beds, sheets, empty stairs, empty corridors ...

In the daytime you never give it much thought
It is at night
Or late in the evening that your mind starts to wander
that your imagination starts playing the games with you
This slightly sick game
mostly to help you stay awake
and you start guessing what goes on behind closed doors
inside the rooms

as if the mind was an eye that could reach further than the cameras

Something has caught your eye during the day late in the afternoon maybe: a man enters the lobby he carries a worn-out suit he pays cash and there is a feeling about him as he pays as he opens the door to his room — enters stooped, kind of And you imagine him there

on his knees A rope maybe, around his neck

Ore later on
down in the bar
a young Asian girl
barely sixteen
With black, shiny hair, beady eyes
The man besides her is older
Broad

Italian maybe, or Russian, and he sort of

handles her

Pushes her in front of him into the elevator while beholds her wrists with his left hand

and as night progresses, you can't stop thinking about her bent over in a sofa bent over a desk while an object is being inserted into her anus, her vagina, and while you keep your eyes on the screens

on the parking-lot

on the stairs leading down to the kitchen

the stairs leading down to the basement – you know that this might be what is happening

that it could be happening right now

as you sit there

as you stair at the screens

and there is not the fuck you can do about it

And the hours pass

and everything is so quiet

and you want to cry out

you want to tell somebody what's goin on

what could be going on

but who should you tell

and what should you tell them

Short pause

Rakel:

When I close my eyes, I can see them The sleepers behind closed doors the lights being switched on The lights being switched off The sound of a television-set A child crying A woman crying

One:

Yes.

Rakel:

And that's when I see him

I am sitting there behind those flickering screens and I see him

One:

Where?

Rakel:

There

A glimpse of him only

A neck

A back

down by the reception

He holds his gloves in his left hand

His coat across his arm

He has parked his car in the basement

It is a four-wheel drive

I see him as he leaves the camera to the left and enters the camera to the right I see him holding the keycard The way he touches the doorhandle Opens the door to his room hesitates as if he is about to turn around as if he is about to turn around to see if there is anybody there, watching him One: And now? Can you see him now? Rakel: The light in his room is on all night long He just sits there Samuel: Yes He just sits there at the edge of his bed There, on those white, neat sheets He does not turn on the TV He does not speak on the phone He does not shower He sits in the shower with all his clothes on He sits there for the longest time ... Rakel: Its nighttime I am searching for his face I am going through some old recordings There he is It's a Tuesday another Tuesday And I play it again and again see how he enter the hotel at exactly the same time Pays for exactly the same room How he enters into the camera from the left And I want him to turn around (under her breath) turn around Will he turn around? (under her breath) turn around turn around (under her breath)Yes (under her breath) I want to see your face Short pause 2. One: I am the one talking Rakel:

And I keep running through the recordings and then ask me again and again; what are yo doing that for?

A colleague (before):

What are you doing that for?

Rakel (before):

```
Doing what?
   Rakel (now):
   You mean taking care of them?
   You mean the recordings?
   A colleague (before):
   You know that you are not allowed to take them out of the building?
   Rakel (now):
   And I say that I have never taken anything out of the building
   Another colleague (before):
   Can I see?
   Rakel (now):
   They say: is that somebody you know?
   Rakel (before):
   No
   A colleague (before):
   Can I see?
   Rakel (now):
   They say:
   A colleague (before):
   Is that somebody you know?
A beat
   One:
   Can you hear me talking?
   In the evening
   when nobody else is listening
   Rakel is globing through her recordings, playing them over and over again.
   She is lookin for a face
   Finds a back
   A pair of gloves
   A closed door
   Anna is in the livingroom
   She is checking the silverware
   Making sure that it is all there
   She says:
   Anna:
   It is the dog
   Somebody has to take care of the dog
   It is the kids
   Ewo:
   I am just so bloody restless
   Anna:
   I keep thinking of words like mine
   Hannah (shouting from another room):
   Can you look after the dog for a minute?
   Anna?
   Rakel:
   Its my hands
   My thighs
```

```
My words
   The things I do
   Samuel:
   I mean, one can't go around thinking about
   I can't stop thinking about it
   It was my mission
   The others started it, but I was the one ending I
   I had to, that's all
   It is my job
   Hannah (before):
   Is that's what on your mind?
   Really, Samuel
   Just let it go
   Samuel:
   It was my responsibility
   Lately I have been thinking about works like "mine"
   Like my hands, my stuff
   Hannah (before):
   One, two, three, four/
   Anna:
   When I stand here by the window
Hannah keeps on counting
   Hannah:
   five, six, seven, eight
   Anna:
   When I let the dog out
   As I wash the dishes
   As I count the silverware
   the napkin-rings - nine, ten, elleven
   just to make sure that it is all there, that nothing is missing
   (shouting, as if she had a need to defend herself):
   No!
   It was not me!
   I did not do it!
   I haven't done anything!
   Anna (before):
   I did not do anything
   Anna (now):
   It was all there when I left!
   I wasn't there
   I saw nothing
   Anna. (before):
   I saw nothing
   I was walking the dog
   Anna (now):
   I was with the kids
```

Why do you ask me this?

Anna (before): When I wasn't there	
One: They are not there	
Hannah (before): Samuel, I can't find those keys	
One: Hannah is looking for her keys	
Hannah (before): They are just not here	
What do you mean?	
No. No, I never Put them there	
One: She is checking the silverware	
Anna(before): One, two, three. Five, six, seven, eight	
One: The living room is empty	
Anna: One, two, three, four, five, six, seven	
Low laughter	
	3.
Anna: What are you doing here?	
Ewo:	
Anna: No, I mean i. What are you doing here? Did somebody see you?	
Stay away from that fridge	
Close that fridge Ewo	
Ewo: I am starving!	
Anna: Who gave you a key?	
Ewo:	

I am starvring. Do you have anything?

Anna: I never gave you a key
Ewo: You must have something.
Anna: Close that draw, Ewo!
Short pause
Ewo: What are you doing?
Anna: I am counting the knives
Ewo: You are counting the knives
Anna: Give me that key I don't want you to lock yourself in whenever
I said Tuesday. I said you could come Tuesday. That you had to call first That you could/
Ewo: I missed you
Anna: Let me see your pockets
Ewo: It is true I missed you I couldn't wait
I could never I would never You are the only friend I have
Anna: Friend? Friend! You call yourselves a friend!
Do you know what they would do if they found you here?
Have you spoken to the kids? You did not speak to the kids?
I am at their mercy do you get that? Do you know what that means? What it means to be here at their mercy?
Are you laughing?
Ewo: But what can they do?
So they through you out So they turn you in

Is that really the worst thing that can happen? Or is it this?
Standing here counting other peoples knives?

Lets go back

Lets go somewhere else We will find something Something better I will help you

Anna:

Not this time

Just shut that cupboard!

Ewo:

You are my Anna

—

Anna:

No

Not now.

Not here.

Not like that – We

Not like that way

They can hear us

See us

If they come down and see us

Not here

Pause

Ewo (in a low voice):

What are you thinking about?

Anna:

Nothing

Ewo (in a low voice):

What are you thinking about

Anna(in a low voice):

I'm not thinking about anything

Ewo (in a low voice):

What are you thinking about

A beat

Anna:

He's at the top of the stairs. I'm hiding in the basement. Behind an old oil barrel, in a parking lot. I'm hiding in the bushes and he cannot find me. His face. Bottles of booze. A heap of cardboard boxes. Toxins spilling over on the pavement, the endless rows of trailers by the border crossings. Girls waiting for what? The smell of gasoline and vomit. My face pushed deep into a mattress. His sleep. His toxic intoxicated sleep all boozed up.

Pigs' blood thick and sticky on the frozen concrete. The slaughter. The slaughterhouse. Frozen berries hard as glass. My hands beating, digging, scraping at the mud. The language in me still and thick and dark like ink. Neon maybe -

Neon and fog. Drizzle. Drizzle resembling gas. Gas all lit up. The world lit up. Everything lit up and Ewo and I in the middle of it. Me and him in the middle of it. Alight. The streets, my teeth, my flesh, the inside my flesh, the softness under my fingernails. Me and Ewo. Fleeing. Maybe running, splattering alight.

Inside the city. Inside the belly of a big city. Inside the belly of another big city. The rattling of our bones, of our fluorescent skeletons dancing into the dark, hiding under the soiled underbelly of a freight train, crossing another border, then another border and then somewhere on the outskirts of northern Europe by the lanterns of the factory, by the firecrackers, by a New Year's Eve I've almost forgot about.

One

Anna is thinking about her father
Ewo is undressing her
He is undressing himself
He stands in front of an open window smoking
He is not thinking
A the hotel, Rakel is storing recording on a memory-stick
Samuel is leaving the bunker

A door opens

One:

He changes his shoes Grabs his coat

Samuel:

Drives home

One:

No

Samuel:

I drive home

One:

No

Samuel:

I am just driving?

One:

You know where you are going You have ended up there a lot lately Every Tuesday sometimes

Samuel:

What am I doing?

One:

Checking in

You are in the elevator You are on the bed You sit there

Samuel (before):

Yes

Give me room 1103

Samuel:

I never knew there were so many people there

One:

Seven

Samuel:

A whole family

```
One:
   Seven/
   Samuel:
   children
Short pause
   One:
   You sit there
   gazing at nothing
   You do not sleep
   You haven't slept
   At home in the villa the kids are asleep
   Anna is just about to go to bed
   she has left some cold meat for you in the kitchen, and a glass of gherkins
   You enter the hallway
   Stand there in the dark
   You settle in the windowsill
   start to eat
   all of a sudden famished
   the dark is thick around you
   You are thirsty
   You get yourselves a bear
   and another
   You drink straight from the bottle
   You watch as the bubbles shoot up from the bottom, through the dark malty
   liquid like tiny, sparkly planets and you think
   This is not over
   It continues
   still and all the time -
   Anna:
   Are you up?
   One:
   She says, while tying a knot on the old bathrobe she is wearing
   I thought I heard something
   I just came to check the door
   To make sure the alarm was on
   Samuel:
   Look at me
   It seems I am about to finish the whole jar
   Anna:
   Just eat
   You are more than welcome
   Samuel:
   That robe –
   Anna:
   She gave it to me
   Samuel:
   And the slippers?
   Anna:
```

Hannah gave them to me

Samuel –
Anna: She said — Hannah said:
Samuel: These gherkins are really nice
Anna: I don t know
Samuel: I mean it. They are really nice
Anna: To salty
Samuel: Perfect
Anna: She is working night
Samuel: I know I found her note
One: And you don't want to sleep with her
Anna; You mustn't think
Samuel: What mustn't I think, Anna
What do you think?
What is it you think about?
A beat
One: Everything starts somewehere Anna pickles some gherkins Samuel cleans the car Hannah goes through her wardrobe Puts aside some slippers, an old bathrobe
Hannah (before): Look!
One: Look, she says
Hannah (before): These are for you
One: These are yours

Hannah (before):

	I mean it
	One: You can have them
	Hannah (before): Off course you can Suuuure
	One: Sure, I never wear them anymore
	Hannah (before): They are just filling up space anyway
	One: No point having them here
A	beat
	Samuel: Everything has a beginning
	Anna: I was in the basement, pickling gherkins, the way my mother used to do I had put some cold meat out for him in the kitchen I often leave something out for him when he has been working late
	I heard something I went down to check that the alarm was on
	I found him on the windowsill He was going through the gherkins
	One: And he sees goats skidding down a slopes, a plume of smoke, and he just can't seem to get it out of his head:
	Samuel: No sound. No colour and no sound
	One: And he tries not to think about it And the building keeps on collapsing as Anna enters the kitchen
	Anna: Are you up?
	Samuel: These are nice
	Anna: I just came down to check that the alarm was on
	Samuel: I was about to finish the lot
	One: And that's when he asks about the robe
	Anna:

Hannah gave it to me

Samuel:
And the slippers?
Annna:
She said
I will go and lock the door
Samuel: Leave the door
Anna: I am just going to lock it
Samuel: No Wait Stay
Let's talk Just for a moment
How long have you been with us?
Anna: Here?
Samuel: With us
Anna Six months
Samuel: That's nice That's really great And before – what did you do before?
Anna:
Samuel: That's not a complicated question is it? What's the problem? I just asked you the simplest of questions —
What did you do before you came to us?
Did you have a good time –
Christ! I'm just trying to make conversation here – Can't you just tell me what you did before?
Anna:
Samuel: But for fuck's sake? What's wrong with you?

What's wrong with you? Talk to me!

Anna: I don't	believe
	el: is it that you don't believe don't you believe in?
	lo you just stand there st stand there
Anna: I just t	hink we should –
Samue What! What	
	(in a low voice): ld really get that alarm going.
One: And h	e stops her.
Anna: Please	
One: And sl	ne
Anna: Please	let go of my arm
And he And he Or he And he And sh And he And he And he And it	ne stands there e walks over to the refrigerator e takes out another bottle of beer e drinks it does not drink it e just stands there ne just stands there e lifts the bottle and then he throws it, and the bottle hits the wall e grabs another bottle. And he smashes it against the wall e grabs another smashes against the wall like the last one nen another
Silence	
Samue Anna	el:
Anna:	
Samue I'm so	
Anna:	
Samue Stop th	

Get up

```
Get up!
   Come here
   Sit down
   Just sit down
   Let's talk
   Let's just talk for a little
   It's none of my business. I know. What you did before. It's none of my business
   Anna:
   Samuel:
   And your parents?
   What did they do for a living?
   Anna:
   They had pigs
Short pause
   Rakel:
   It is at night, that's when your thoughts start to wander
   That is when you start playing this game
   This not so healthy game
   mostly to stay awake
   and you start guessing what goes o behind the doors, inside the rooms
   as if the mind was an eye that could reach where the cameras don not
   and you imagine him there
   He is on the bed
   He picks up a ring
   It is a wedding ring
   he puts it on his tongue
   Closes his mouth and then he opens it again
   He puts the ring on his little finger
   He looks at it
   Takes it off again
   One:
   Yes
   Rakel:
   And there is no one there to see it
   One:
   No
   Rakel:
   And all of a sudden I thinking about going up there
   locking myself in
   Enter the room
   Lay down beside him maybe
   stay there -
   One:
   And you wait until he has left
   and then you do it
```

You go up there

Nothing special A bed A nightstand A navy blue carpet And you put your hand on the bed where he has been sitting and you sit in the chair And you look in the bin Rakel: One: It all starts somwehere: Rakel and her recordings Anna kneeling over the broken bottles Samuel in the villa, by the double bed Hannah is there Samuel: Yes Hannah: Samuel, is that you? I did not hear you When did you come home? Come here And you want to be with her Hannah: Come One: And you try to make love to her, but you can not and she says: Hannah: What is it? What is it, Samuel One: She says: Samuel: I know where you've been Hannah: Talk to me Samuel: I know where you stay Hannah: Where have you been? Samuel: Don't you think I know. where your at?

Hannah:

It is a standard room

	Do you really want me to believe that?
	Samuel: You mustn't think
	Hannah: Don't you think I know where you go?
	One: She says:
	Hannah: What do you believe in?
	Samuel: I don't believe that you believe that
	One: She says:
	Hannah: What do you believe in?
	Samuel: I am not suggesting I would never believe that you
	Hannah: What do you believe, in Samuel?
	One: She says: Samuel Samuel Samuel Samuel Samuel Samuel
She	ort pause
	One: I am the one talking Can you heat me? Can your hear my voice? They say I am talking to the dark To my feet To the will in you, Samuel As you stand there As you see the bottle hit the wall As you see Anna bent over it
	As you see Anna bent over it As you reach for Hannah in bed as you drive your kids to school As you kiss them As you drive to work and back again Can not enter It has become possible to enter The same sleeplessness as you lay there on the hotel bed and you check your watch
	Samuel: It is
	One:

Samuel:

04:28

One:

04:32

as the roof collapses

as the stones starts to rain

as the dust settles

as the goats get scattered across the hill

it continues

It keeps on happening

it will go on happening

It will be like this

it will never be another way

Samuel:

Get up

Anna, get up

One:

But she just sits there

Says nothing

She just keeps on wiping the beat of the walls and it is then you discover that

the kids are there

They are standing in the doorway

they are standing in the doorway and you realize that you have been shouting/

Anna:

Hi there –

One:

That you must have been shouting something, because the youngest are covering her ears with her hands, and you let go of her. You let go of Anna and you see that a shard of glass is embedded in her cheek, and for a second you feel like crying

Short pause

Samuel:

I am crossing the lawn

Where are my shoes?

Hannah watches me from the window

I have taken off my wedding-ring

It is in my mouth, on my tongue and there is this feeling of weightlessness

One:

Ewo rests his forehead against the window

Anna is washing and washing the kitchen wall

Can you see her?

Ewo:

Yes

One:

What is she doing?

Ewo:

She os on her knees

She is wearing an old bathrobe

She is wiping and wiping the bear of that fucking wall

Ome:

You are late	
Ewo: I know	
One: She has been waiting for you She has always been waiting for you	
What's on your mind?	
Ewo: Nothing	
One: What are you hoping for?	
Ewo: Nothing	
He knocks on the window	
Ewo: Anna	
Anna	
One: Samuel crosses the lawn	
Samuel: What are you doing here?	
Ewo: Me?	
Samuel: Yes	
Don't move I said what are you doing here?	
Ewo: Wait!	
Wait for fuck sake. I can explain I'm a friend. I know Anna Just ask her She asked me to come You can just talk to her	
Anna!	
Samuel: Don't	
Look at her Look at her How long do you think she'll go on doing that?	
Ewo:	

Samuel

She'll just keep on doing it, won't she? She'll just keep on wiping those walls for as long as it takes

One:

Annas left hand is bleeding.

Her blond hair is dark at the roots-

It is wet around her face

Samuel stands barefoot in the grass

He walks away from them

Just walks

He has taken off the wedding ring

It is in his mouth, at the tip of his tongue. He is about to swallow it

He stops

Hannah has drawn the curtains

Hannah (fast and in a low voice):

Samuel, Samuel, Samuel, Samuel, Samuel

One:

Anna wraps the broken glass in a newspaper

Ewo is standing now

He keeps on knocking gently on the window

saying her name

Samuel passes his car

Samuel passes the gate

He just keeps on walking

Hannah (in a low voice):

Samuel, what's going on

Whats happening to you?

One:

He falls on his knees

Samuel:

Tell me

Please tell me

Tell me what's happening to me

One:

He gets up

He feels disoriented

He does not know where he is

He will keep on walking all night

Samuel:

Where am I going?

One:

Away from here

Samuel:

I did not bring my valet. I have no shoes

One:

Ewo stands in the kitchen door

Anna says:

Anna:

What are you doing here?

As Rakel makes her selves a cup of coffee And the hotel is a beast with a thousand eyes and a thousand mouths, locks, sinks, doors She is talking to herself She does not see the man as he enters the foyer as he walks into the camera to the left He is barefoot He has been crying He is all sober now Samuel: Where am I? One: You are in the boiler-room Samuel; The boiler-room? One: You came here by the back stairs Samuel: I am all alone in here One: It is hot is it not? And Rakel says to herself Rakel: Fuck it. I am not a fucking stalker Short pause One: And the hotel has sixteen floors fourteen over ground and two underneath And where she sits right now, there are elleven floors above her Rakel: If the hotel should topple One: If this hotel were veto collapse, all those eleven floors would fall on top of us Rakel: Elleven floors with 54 rooms's in each of them then the rooftop swimming pool, the gym, the restaurant on the second floor, all the people working here, all the hired helpers, hundreds of them. Over a thousand in high season

O ...

And Rakel says to herself

Rakel.

It is Wednesday

He never comes on a Wednesday

One:

She takes the subway home.

The world is dry and hot and black. Almost electric

She climbs the stairs. Undresses in the dark Stands there in the middle of the room among her belongings She keeps her socks on She stands there in the light from the aquarium She does not turn on the radio. She does not turn on the TV She stands in the light from the refrigerator I have opened the fridge One: She is eating a hot dog straight from the can She does not bother heating it She leans her forehead against the icebox One: I am there right beside her Rakel: Yes One: She does not notice me Rakel: No One: The fridge is almost empty Just two cups of youghurt, a jar of coffee and a cheese. Yellow and hard at the edges I am so close I am right behind her She know I am there She wait's I wait I rest my hand against her back It is cold and hard like glass Short pause One: Anna looks at Ewo A car door slams shut One: Ewo starts the engine Anna: Are you sure, Ewo? Rakel: I am in the kitchen I close my eyes and see him there On the bed In the room

One:

At the hotel

He sits in the boiler-room

Rakel:
It is all dark in there
One:.
She gets dressed again
And the assessment interest on the latest the second in th
And the screens light up as Rakel is back behind them
Rakel:
He is waiting for somebody
One:
There is a feeling of urgency
The corridor outside room 1103 is empty
Where is he?
She/
Rakel:
looks for him
looks for film
One:
She/
Rakel:
Says:
One:
I/
n 1 1
Rakel: can not see him
can not see mm
Anna:
It does not matter
It is all right, Ewo
0 /
One:
And Rakel stares at the screens as she disconnects camera number 112 and
camera number 1134
One:
And the trafick is relentless
and she disconnects camera 76 and 79
Rakel:
Yes
165
Ewo:
Did you see his face?
Did you see it?
What the fuck was he on about
One:
And Rakel disconnects camera 320, 321 and 324
P
Ewo:
Was he drunk ore something?
Anna:
I don't think so
1 doi: t minix 50

Ewo:

He had no shoes on One And all the screens in the control-room are black now as Rakel locks herself into room 1103 There is a smell of detergent She thinks: Maybe just walk out of it all Rakel: Yes One: She sits on the bed One: I am sitting there beside her Can you feel me? Rakel: No One: But you know I'm here? Silence One: What do you see? Rakel: The TV The bathroom One: What do you see? Rakel: The window. The view of the park. And you walk over to it? Rakel: The lawn scorched Brown almost One: Are we there? Are we by the window? It hasn't rained for months One: And you wish that it could rain -Rakel: How I wish it would rain

One: What more?

Rakel: Ahhhhhhhhhh
One: The park is almost empty The newsstand is about to open A woman arrives with three small children
Hannah: No No, this is the way Come Let us find daddy Yes, daddy is here Jon. Do not touch that please. Look,now you are all dirty
Come now!
One: And you turn your head away
Hannah: Yes. He is here
No he is resting. Just resting
One: You sit on the bed The sheets feel cold under your hands
Rakel: What?
One:
Rakel: He is not here
One: This is not where he is And you leave the room And there in the hallway/
Rakel: May I help you?
One: There is a man
Rakel: Are you lost?
One: He is barefoot His shirt are open
Rakel: Are you looking for your room? Is this your room?

Samuel: Eh –
Rakel: Are you staying here? You can not be here if you if you are not staying here
Samuel: I usually —
Rakel: Isn't this were you stay? Then I have to call security
Samuel: I am –
One: It is Samuel
Rakel: You are? Look, only guests are allowed here If you're not staying in this hotel you shouldn't —
Samuel: I can't —
Rakel: Do you need to book a room? Have you booked a room?
One: It is him
Rakel: You will have to get yourself a room
Samuel: I can not pay
Rakel:
Samuel: I have no money. I didn't take my card $-$ I can't. I can't do it. I can't be $-$ I can't do my job anymore. $-$ I can't do this $-$ I need to see their faces $-$ There is no way I can do this, and my kids $-$ There is just no way $-$ No way I could $-$
One: Rakel. It is him
Rakel: Ok. I hear you. Wait.
Wait Wait
One:

And she takes his hand and Anna says

Anna (in a low voice): Ewo, Ewo, Ewo – where are you taking me?
Rakel: I am holding his arm as if he was a child.
Samuel: I am Samuel
Rakel: Rakel
One: Rakel opens the door to room 1103 and Anna and Ewo takes off at an intersection I am right there beside him
Anna: Keep your eyes on the road, Ewo
Ewo: You're hungry.
Anna: No
Ewo: You're hungry. I know it Let's get something to eat!
One: And its hot
And the city deep down in the valley resembles a mirage and Ewo says:
Ewo: Is it not great to get out of town for a second
Anna: Yes. So good to get out. Out of that house
Ewo: Just the two of us
Anna: We should not have taken that car
Ewo: Borrowed
We have just borrowed it
Come Sit down
That's better
Anna: Do you remember when we were kids? We used to hang out, remember? At Janos place. And his parents where never home, and we used to sit there, throwing ice-cubes at each other It was always us against them, remember? And he had that stick and for some strange reason you really wanted that stick And do you remember that time we snuck down into that basement, though the
journment must mile no onder do no much buschient, mough the

window, in the night	
Ewo:	
God it was dark	
Anna: You had a flashlight, remember?	
Ewo:	
Yes	
One:	
Samuel is in the hallway	
The door to room 1103 is open	
Rakel:	
Come	
One:	
She is right there beside him	
and I keep thinking on words like mine	
Like me	
and Hannah is in the lobby now	
She has the youngest by the hand	
Hannah:	
Well here we are	
One:	
She asks after him	
1	
Hannah:	
We are looking for a man He is a guest here	
The is a guest here	
Yes, yes. He usually stays here	
Like once a week	
What room?	
I do not know exactly	
One:	
The children are playing in the lobby and all of a sudden Anna starts t	
she clenches her cinnamon-bun in her hand and sobs and then she	
Wipes her face	
I am there right beside her	
Anna:	
What?	
One:	
She says	
Appe	
Anna:	
Did you say something?	
Ewo:	
No	
Anna:	
I thought you said something	
0	
One:	

And Ewo takes a bite of his sandwich

chews

Ewo, Anna, the car - as the sunbeams hits the front mirror, the bumpers, the bright red of the bonnet and Anna says: Anna: How fast is it? Ewo: 210 km - 220 -Anna: Not faster? Ewo: 250 maybe One: And she knows they cannot stay there I don't know -One: They cannot stay here Anna: I don't know -I think we should leave Ewo: It is fine It's fine, Anna – I promise. We're leaving in a minute Anna: I think we should be off now. I'll just finish my coffee. Short pause One: Anna and Ewo Hannah and her children Samuel and Rakel A sixteen-story hotel

The following passage can be divided between the characters or shared randomly among them. It can also be performed partly or as a whole choir sequence

One:

This is what we believe in

This is what we will continue to believe in

This is what we got

and the sun is there

Everything lit up

Just for a moment warm and bright

Rakel turns off the tv

Samuel rests his head in her lap – and down in the basement, water starts seeping through the foundations, forcing its way through the sediments, trickling through the insulation, breaking through the vents, the sockets, the outskirts of pipes, along the cracks and the skirting boards.

Just dampness at first.

Soaking everything.

A feeling. Just a feeling – Then it's there.

The water, the force of it, the pressure of it. As it breaks through, pours in, seeping into the carpets, the linen, the dirty sheets in the wicker baskets in the washroom, the grey heaps of laundry on the basement floor. And it keeps on coming. And it keeps on rising. Up the staircase, covering stacks of chairs and discarded shelves at the backside of the parking lot. Washing with it lightbulbs and radios and dvd-players. Wine-lists and napkin holders and old menus. Rising up along the basement walls and spilling onto the ground floor, soaking the soft brown carpet in the hotel lobby, pushing up the elevator shafts, filling the elevators, and bursting out through the doors on the first floor where it spurts, brown and murky over the newly waxed floorboards into the breakfast area.

Sunny streets.

A traffic-jam over by McDonalds. Cars honking their horns by the malfunctioning traffic-lights.

A hot breeze blowing through the park.

Dry leaves adrift across the lawn. Pushing onwards as the wind pushes it along the tarmac on the other side, as an UAV takes off. Fully armed.

This is what we believe in.

This is what we know: Ewo chewing on a bun.

Samuel's head in Rakel's lap.

And Rakel turns on the TV again. She turns to a channel showing nature programs: Zebras, savannahs, killer whales.

And the water is filling the hotel basement

the kitchen

where pots and pans are floating alongside cabbages and cooking utensils, bottles and washing-up liquid, packets of sweet peas, parcels of plastic forks and plastic spoons, containers with offcuts and cold meat. And the water fills the plumbing

pours out of the hundreds of toilets and the washbasins on the first floor spurting from showerheads and bathroom drains

And the debris washes across the marbled floor

pushes its way through the corridors

where the surveillance cameras shortcut

past the control room

where the computers shortcut

and there are people in the doorways

pushing against each other

and the doors -

Who locked the doors!

Why are the doors locked!

Pause

One:

This is my voice.

I am the one talking.

When it's quiet — when there is no body there to listen — and Rakel says:

Rakel:

What do you believe in?

Do you believe in anything?

Do you believe in anything at all, Samuel?

A beat

One:

And the UAV is heading for the northern provinces of Aghanistan, the southern parts of Somalia, the western parts of Angola.

And the sun beats down on the scorched grass in the park as the traffic jam slows and jilts, edging its way past the hotel, past the H&M, trickles into the alleys – and the fallen leaves lift for a moment as the wind sweeps them up in one swift movement pushing them on to the curve and onwards

spiraling red and ocher. And the lights go out all the lights are out the only light there is the flickering blue from the TV-screens across the white leather sofa in a private suite across the pink bedspread in a room for one across the king-sized bed in a double and a deer lowers its head to drink and the riverbeds are running like dried-out veins across the Afghan provinces Rakel: It hasn't rained all summer. How I wish it would rain. One: as eight Afghan women herd their goats along the dried-up creeks carrying piles of brittle wood on their back And Ewo says: Ewo: Are you ready? One: And the water has reached the second floor now and it's still rising / I'll show you how fast it can go. - and it will keep on rising as it floods the breakfast restaurant lifts the chairs, the tables, tear to pieces the flower arrangements all ready and waiting for the evening banquet sweeping with it a dozen teak tables as it reaches the grand dining room on the third floor as it reaches the bar its mirrored surfaces its glass shelves filled with bottles of booze bottles of wine bottles of soda water and the pressure rises and it reaches the glass wall leading into the conference area and the glass breaks and the wall bursts and as it collapses, cascades of broken glass spurt, fall and sink to the floor great piles of shards of glass, bottles, cutlery, chairs - and through this broken landscape drift the floating bodies One by one at first then in pairs and soon there are hundreds of them face up face down like sleepers sinking to the floor as if the hotel is a gigantic ship about to keel over. This is how it goes. The water will keep on rising until the room is full, until the room is bursting with water cracking, sighing, shaking as the pressure mounts as the doors burst open the doors burst open and torrents of water start thundering along the corridors carrying with them suitcases and bags hairbrushes and makeup-kits, toys and old train sets, condoms and diapers and

bundles of last week's newspapers while Hannah runs down the corridors

pushing her way amongst the panicking crowds she can't find her girl the girl with the brown coat holding her oldest girl by the hand carrying the youngest on her hip She does not shout She isn't making a sound The baby isn't making a sound They have their eyes on the elevator Their eyes on the target /

Anna:

Faster! Make it go faster!

One:

— and in the park, the grass is yellow and brittle from the lack of rain, the ground cracked, all dried out along the foundations of the multi-story hotel complex where the windows on the ground floor, the windows on the first floor and the windows on the second floor are about to burst open as the windows on the 3rd and 4th floor are about to burst open as the building is about to get filled with water

On the 6th floor

where the lights from the television sets are still flickering as the water reaches the 5th

and on the 7th Samuel is resting his head in Rakel's lap

and there is a trembling

a murmur

from underneath their feet

from the ceiling

the inside of the walls

and they can hear how the building shakes and sighs

and Rakel just sits there watching the screen

watching the hummingbirds

a baby giraffe being born

a baby zebra being born

a baby zebra fleeing a lion attack

a hyena attack

the dust pluming around its feet

the blood in the sand

the fear in its eyes

and the water engulfs the cameras in the west wing

soon the whole hotel will be flooded

as it pushes up the elevator shafts

as the walls crumble

as the walls get skinned, leaving the wallpaper drifting in dark gigantic sheets

covered with subtropical flowers

and Hannah is running now

she has lost her oldest

and her girl in the little brown coat

she is clinging on to her youngest

as she has left her safe stand by the elevator

as she is forced by the crowds unto the staircase

further and further up

away from the water

away from the screams and the shouting

up to this creepy silence

and as she walks

the wall of water follows

and as she opens the door to the staircase leading on to the floor above this one

the water is there

waiting for her

thundering over her as an avalanche

as a wall of dark green glass

as it collapses over her

as she stands inside it
holding onto her baby
as the baby gets ripped out of her hands
as the pram gets ripped out of her hands
and Rakel is watching a pelican take flight – an eagle take flight – an albatross
take flight and a UAV crosses the sky leaving behind a pale white trace across
the bright blue and Samuel says:

Samuel:

One:

- as the windows on the ground floor burst open as the windows on the first floor burst open as the windows on the second floor burst open as the windows on the third floor burst open and the water spurts out of them, falls in cascades along the building's shiny surfaces showers the air waters the earth and the withered grass washes over park benches awakes the sleeping homeless drenches the shoepolishers and the dogowners wets the dusty wings of a flock of sparrows and the earth drinks it up and the stone hard ground becomes wet and dark and from somewhere deep down the water starts to pull upwards and inwards into roots and stems into budding branches a violent burst of green

Corridors and rooms

For Vitorchiano August 2016 – by Tale Næss

About the room:

The text can be performed in any space in between the public and the private. In a stairwell, in a corridor, in an abandoned restaurant, in a hotel-kitchen or in a hallway etc.

About the actor:

She can just be herself.

Or the text could be performed by a child.

It could also be performed by a man.

Possible starts:

The audience enter as a group together with the actor, or the actor meats them as they enter.

All through the performance the forth wall is gone. Addresses are personal, even intimate. Gazes are met and touch is allowed.

About the text:

This text is as cold as it is emotional.

As virtuose as it is matter of fact.

It answers to a real place and to an imagined place.

It is a crime-site, an event, an address.

It is past and it is time rushing forward.

1. THE CORRIDORS

Shall we?

Shall we let something pass? Here? Between us?

See – a nun.

Can you see her?
Stooped by the doorway.
Holding her left hand on her belly.

A wedding-party! Hear how they sing!

And a little bony boy – wide awake by the door.

He's mother has barricaded it.

There is a man on the other side. He has stoped shouting. He his burying his face in the carpet –

And in the room across the hall a couple asleep. All entangled in the bed.

- Hush.
- We must not wake them.

It is soon morning and they need their sleep.

And over in that room over there, a man is about to collapse over his memoars. His one hand clenching the pen, the other his chest. It is a grinder, grinding the present into the past. Trying to hold onto it all, he has stepped out of time.

Can you see it?

Can you see his hand?

Can you see how they strive to hold on to all this?

As they strive to hold on – as the wedding party arrives, as the guests arrives – a scythe cutting through thickets ...

They are here now.

All of them.

Those who can pay and those who can not.

Those dressing for dinner.

Those going to bed and the ones who cannot sleep.

Can you feel them?

The stillborn and the unborn – hanging onto time. In the corridors, behind closed doors, on the first floor, the second floor, the third floor. In room number 2, room number 18, room number 10.

Let's enter.

2. THE ROOMS

One – All the furniture covered in sheets. The walls wet with mortar

Two – a man praying, his crucifix. The cat and its shadow

Three – All the windows are open

Four – a politician on his knees. Shards of glass everywhere

Five – a confession

Six - an ongoing transaction

a dog barking

a red ball rolling down the stairs.

In room number seven – Nothing.

In room number eight – a bony boy wide awake.

He has wet himself. He does not dear to tell his mother. He stands in the middle of the room listening.

It's all quiet now.

Nobody shouting anymore.

We see him.

We see him barefoot on the floorboards as he walks over to the door, as he climbs up on the chair that barricades it, as he puts his eye to the key-whole.

We are right behind him as he looks out and sees – nothing.

Just the hallway.

Just the wall on the other side.

From this angle he cannot see the man face down on the floor. The ring he clinches in his left hand. His eye swollen.

There he is. Drunk. Asleep. Dreaming.

The boy cannot follow him where he is. Into the dream where he crosses a bridge in a strange town. Where he holds the boy's hand, lifts him up, where the sky is all purple and blue.

In room number nine – a radio playing.

Song.

Sun across the floorboards.

In room number ten - A marriage not yet consummated. The groom half undressed at the edge of the bed. He is hiding his face in his hands, overwhelmed by lust or by shame.

Down in the restaurant the wedding guests continues to party.

A man has taken off his jacked and the other guests chares as he buttons up his shirts, showing off his muscly back.

An easter-prosession!

A sudden shower ...

Generations that come and go as the church yard is filled by mourners, as accounts are opened and closed — Can you see my face?

It's there in the crowd.

I am looking for you.

In a mirror a mother greets her newborn baby – that's me too.

I am there. Blinking at my reflection.

Night-time now.

The dead on their stretchers as a war breaks out. My face is a gateway – it is a door swinging back and forth between what's private and what's public.

A soldier lights his cigarette. Leaning his back against a basement-door as the judge collapses over his memoars. His hands shaking as he writes:

- I am trying to write, but I am getting nowhere.
- I awake in the night. I am falling through the corridors.

Sometimes I feel that it's as if it's been all in vain. That I made the one wrong decisions. Passed the wrong sentence.

Am I -

He writes:

- Am I this mistake?

Am I just an unfinished puzzle?

Silence

Yes.

Silence

Did you hear that? How heavy – The weight of it

as the judge collapses, as he is already gone, already empty – He will no longer dream of falling through the the corridors.

He will no longer dream of falling through the the corridors, lived life will no longer cling to him like leftovers – and I am a child, here on my own, by the door, on the floor.

Can you see me?

Aren't anybody going to pick me up?

And there are room upon room, stairwell upon stairwell, can you hear the rattling inside the walls, the creaking in the floor — That is time moving. Steadying itself as it makes up its mind. Sneaking through the corridors, hiding in the corners. Barking like a monkey. Rushing through the centuries, entering spaces, bodies, minds and onwards into other spaces, bodies, minds.

The war is here.

The war is over.

Time for peace and for what comes after.

The rooms are empty now. Dust falls where it pleases.

The air is hot and heavy.

That is all.

We are all there is:

A convent-girl all alone in her cell.

She is seventeen. She stands terrified of sounds. Shakes as she hears a child

crying. It is her own child, left alone in the woods – is it not, sister?

Sister, look at us.

Just look at us and say it wasn't true:

That it wasn't you.

- It wasn't me.
- It was not my child.
- I did not do it.
- That there is somebody elses child crying.

But still it awakes her at night and she says:

- Don't look at me.

Why do you look at me?

Why do you look at me like that?

Why don't you say something?

Why don't you answer me?

I never said anything.

- You were the one crying, we say.
- I never cry.
- You were scared.
- I am never scared.
- You wanted your mother. You wanted do go home.
- I am fine. I don't want to go home. That's not true! Who told you that! There is nothing wrong with me.

Don't look at me!

Stop looking at me like that!

What are we supposed to tell her?

What should we say?

How can we comfort her?

- It is allright. We are here now.
- You'll be fine.
- No, the winter won't be too cold. You will never shout, cry, despair again.
 - We won't look at you.
 - See We've closed our eyes.
 - $-\operatorname{Look}$ we are not looking at you anymore. We are not even here. We can't even see you any longer.

Short pause

And then – we are somewhere else.

She is no longer with us.

We are in room 32.

How bright it is!

Completely drenched in sunlight.

– Wait. Don't touch.

Just stay still.

Now you can continue.

Come.

Can you see it now?

The open door?

There to the left of the bed?

The sink in the corner.

The carpets.

Can you smell it?

sweet

sickly.

Can you not smell it?

It's still her isn't it

the smell of flesh rotting?

The sun against our face.

The shape of something on the floor.

```
Now close your eyes.
   Wait til you are somewhere else.
Silence
   Now you can open them again.
   Mmmmm – the smell of honey and rosemary ...
Listens
   Spring.
   Rain falling against warm cobblestones on a hot afternoon.
   The key in the lock.
   Doors that swings open and that which waits behind them.
   No.
   Can't we just leave it – the bony boy, the judge, the nun, the voices saying:
   - Go.
   - Come in.
   - You came!
   - I have been waiting.
   You are finally here.
   Finally it's just us.
   Finally it's not just me –
   And the walls start tumbling
   and room number 21 becomes a garden
   and there is the sound of a body falling and the silence as it hits the floor
   beneath
cocaine white like a seventeen year old girl.
   She left it all behind.
   She could not sleep, could not eat.
   She was homesick.
   And the boy puts his eye to the key-whole
   balancing on the chair - seeing nothing at first.
   Then his father – as he gets up from the floor
   stands there
   steadies himself.
   What do you think, little boy?
   Will he stay?
   Will he go?
   Will he ever come back?
   Time is a shadow.
   It is a wide-eyed boy.
   We are there with him.
   We stand in the doorway between what was
   and what will be.
   We are the mirror where time shows itself
   taking on a face:
   Yours
   mine.
   mine – as room number 11 gets filled up with instruments.
   With sunshine.
   A litter of kittens.
   With whatever.
   Look – a road spins out of nowhere lit up like in an old arcade-game.
   This is a puzzle
   a piece here
```

and a piece there as the picture completes itself.

I am the room. You are the key.

What do you see?

Sweatshop – Aleppo

```
A play for the ear for five voices by Tale Næss
The voices:
Sara
Meriam
The boy
The boy's mother
Meriam's father
                                            1.
   The boy (close up):
   I had this dream. I dreamt about tree standing tall at the top of a steep hill
   By the foot sat two sisters
   One of them was you
   Meriam (close up):
   Me?
   The boy (close up):
   Meriam (close up):
   I was in your dream?
   The boy (close up):
   Yes, you were
   Meriam (close up):
   But I have no sister -
   The boy (close up):
   I think the other one was Sara
   In the dream she did not look like Sara, but I think it was her
Short pause
   Meriam (close up):
   Go on
   The boy (close up):
   Well – there was this tree –
   and I could follow its roots all the way down under ground
   And at its root was this well
   and deep down in the well there were cities
   cities long forgotten
```

cities long abandoned with their alleyways and squares

with their mosques, and schools, and libraries where books floated about in water
darkened by ink
and one of these cities was Aleppo
and I could see your house there
and the stairs leading up to it
and the room where you and your brothers used to sleep
you were there in your bed
all the other beds were empty
and then there was Sara
She was outside the building, throwing pebbles at your window
shouting your name

Far away – as from another time or another room: city-sounds, voices and cries through an open window. The sound of Aleppo before the war.

Sara (back then – shouting from the street): Meriam! It's me! Come out! Meriam (now - close up): Did you dream about us? A window opens Meriam (back then – answering Sara): I am not allowed -The boy (now - close up): Yes Sara (then): Just tell your father that you are with me - Tell him that then he'll let you Meriam (then – shouting): But I can't – he won't Meriam's father (then): Whose there? You can be thirteen maybe, or fourteen Who are you talking to? And he will not let you out Meriam (then): It's Sara Meriam (now-close up): And you saw all that? My room Meriam's father (then): Shut that window and my brothers beds - and

The boy (now - close up):

Yes

Listen to what I am saying, - just shut

Nobody is leaving this house today

that window

```
The boy (now-close up):
  And at the end of the well, there was an ocean I think
  sun on the waves
  and sometimes -
                 the whole ocean covered by boats
A voice outside his door
  The boy's mother (now):
  Are you in there?
  What are you doing?
  The boy (now):
  Nothing, mum
The door opens
  The boy's mother (now):
  Who were you talking to?
  The boy (now):
  Me?
  The boy's mother (now):
  I thought I heard voices.
  You are up
  Can't you sleep?
  The boy (now):
  The boy's mother (now):
  No, of course you can't. It's impossible. Just plain impossible.
  Are you hungry?
  Shall I bring you something to eat?
  Did you have one of those dreams again?
  The boy (now):
  I'm fine mum. Don't worry.
  I'm going to bed now.
  The boy's mother (now):
  So-
  What did you see?
  In your dream?
  Was I there?
  Your father?
  Did he say something?
  In your dream, - did he say something?
  The boy (now):
  It was just a dream, mum.
```

```
It was just a dream I had.
   The boy's mother (now):
   Do you want me to stay a while?
   The boy (now):
   No
   The boy's mother (now):
   I don't mind
   The boy (now):
   Really mum. I'm fine.
   I am going to bed now.
   The boy's mother (now):
   Give me a shout then, if you need anything.
The door closes behind her.
Silence
   The boy (now - close up):
   Meriam?
   Are you there?
   She is gone. She won't be back for a while.
Short pause
   Meriam (now – close up):
   Tell me about my brothers
   In your dream, did you see them?
   The boy (now - close up):
   No
   Meriam (now – close up):
   You didn't see any of them?
   Feisal? Or Wahel?
   The boy (now - close up):
   I saw Roch
   Meriam (now – close up):
   Roch?
   The boy (now - close up):
   I did not see your brothers, but I saw Roch. And Fares
   He was cycling through town with a box of chickens on the back of his bike
   Meriam (now – close up):
   Nobody's seen Fares or Roch in months
   Not since they volunteered
   The boy (now - close up):
   I saw him
   Face down at the bottom of ditch
   Meriam (now - close up):
   I don't like it when you talk like that
```

```
The boy (now - close up):
   You wanted to know
   Meriam (now - close up):
   I wanted to know about my brothers
   The boy (now - close up):
   And I dreamt about Roch
   I can't decide what I am going to dream about, Meriam
   Meriam (now - close up):
   And if you could?
   The boy (now - close up):
   If I could what?
   Meriam (now – close up):
   If you could decide what you were going to dream about
   The boy (now - close up):
   Meriam (now – close up):
   If you could decide and you had a dream about my brothers, what would you -
   The boy (now - close up):
   Meriam -
   Meriam (now – close up):
   I just - if you just - if you could only -
   You never see them?
   You do not see them at all?
Silence
   The boy (now - close up):
   This is what I dreamt - You were standing at the foot of a tree
   Sara was there and when you turned around you saw a kind of opening
   a door
   and then -
   It's hard to explain
   It's as if everything grew darker
   Just this darkness
   and you were running
   Meriam (now – close up):
   The boy (now - close up):
   And I think it was raining
   Meriam (now – close up):
   Why was I running?
   The boy (now - close up):
   I don't know
   You were just running
   Maybe you felt like it
   It had been such a long time - such a long time since you were last running like
   such a long time since you've been outside
```

```
Meriam (now - close up):
   Where am I heading?
   To your place?
   The boy (now - close up):
   You are not here. Not in Aleppo
   Meriam (now – close up):
   Then where am I?
   The boy (now - close up):
   In a city
   Meriam (now – close up):
   What city?
   The boy (now - close up):
   A big city
   Meriam (now – close up):
   Am I all alone?
   The boy (now - close up):
   I think Sara is there.
   Meriam (now – close up):
   Sara?
   The boy (now - close up):
   She is waiting for you. In your room. Where you live
Silence
   Meriam (now – close up):
   Can you dream stuff that are going to happen?
   The boy (now - close up):
   I'm just guessing, Meriam
   I'm just guessing
Silence
A beat
   The boy (now):
   Meriam?
   Meriam, are you there?
Silence
   The boy (now):
   Meriam – I can't hear you
   Talk to me
Silence
The sound of the city
Of war maybe, coming closer
   The boy (now – close up – addressing himself):
   Sometimes I dream that everything is like it used to be:
   Meriam in the house next door
   Sara in her yellow dress
```

Fares on his bike crossing the roundabout with a box of chickens on the back, but I know that it's over. That they are all gone Soon we'll be the only ones here

2.

The boy (now – close up):

I dream I get stabbed in my thigh, in my neck, in my chest
I dream that they cut my throat
I awake and I'm live
I awake and I'm live
I am awake and I'm alive

Meriam says:

I wish I never met you

I say:

I am here now

We share an apple

I think:

Soon, she is going to kiss me Or I am going to kiss her

She says:

Meriam (then):
What do you think?

What do you think is going to happen

next?

The boy (now – close up): She is standing right beside me She says: Tell me about my brothers She says: Tell me where they are

Meriam (then):

Why can't you tell me about me about my brothers?

In my dream we are walking through acers of golden wheat

She says:

Tell me!

Tell me about your dreams

The boy (then):

You must go home now, Meriam Your father is looking for you

And your father chases you away from the window

Meriam (then): I hate him I hate him

And there is shooting in the northern hills And you are wearing that red sweater and I take your hand –

He won't let me out

the boy (then):

```
Your father wants to take you away from here
   He used to have five children
   now you are the only one
   Do you hear me?
   Meriam (now – close up):
   I hear you
Silence
   The boy (now - close up):
   We are standing outside the grocery shop
   All the others have gone home
   The streets are empty and I take your hand
                                                 The boy (then):
                                                 They've all left
   And I bite into the apple
   and you bite into the apple
   and the street
   the houses
   your face
   everything around us all of a sudden
   all lit up
                                                 Meriam (then):
                                                 I know
                                                 The boy (then):
   and I say:
                                                 Soon we'll be the only one here
                                           3.
   The boy (now - close up):
   I see you.
   You do not notice it, but I see you
   Meriam (now – close up):
   Where are we?
   The boy (now - close up):
   You're in your room
   Meriam (now – close up):
   Where?
   The boy (now - close up):
   In Turkey
   In Izmir
   You have travelled here by bus
   You've been here several months now
   You are safe
   You are waiting
   You are waiting for them to come and take you away from here
   Meriam (now – close up):
   Can you see all that?
   The boy (now - close up):
```

Yes

Meriam (now – close up): Where we are? What we are doing

The boy (now - close up):

It's early morning

Soon the shop on the first floor will open and the old girls next door will put the kettle on

and the sisters from Yarmuk have already finished their breakfast soon they will start swiping the stairs, as the owners gets the goods ready as he opens the till

checks the front door, the back door, that all is as it should be

Sara is still asleep You do not have the heart to wake her

Meriam (in Izmir):

Sara

Sara, wake up

In the room in the basement the sowing machines stand lined up and ready

> Meriam (in Izmir): Sara. Get up

and in the attic, in the storage rooms, the boxes stand fully loaded with zippers and fabrics hooks and threads

Shall I put the kettle on?

And a truck unloads its goods in the back yard
And box upon box gets filled in the basement
of orange and blue life vests
of yellow and grey – and all the time
all hours of the day – that low humming of the sowing machines

Nobody else knows
Nobody else knows what you're lives has become
That you are not even allowed to talk to anyone
To open the door, walk the streets, and it is driving you crazy
You cannot leave the house
They have your papers
they won't let you out of their sight
all this silence
all this waiting and you open up the window and you:

The sound of a window being opened and the city outside

Meriam (in Izmir – shouting out the window): Aaaaaaaaahhhhhhhh!

Sara (in Izmir):
Shut that window!
Shut that window, Meriam – stop making a racket
You are not supposed to open it –

Meriam (now – close up): And then –

```
The boy (now - close up):
   Sara closes the window
   The whole day goes by -
   you sit bent over the material
   a zipper
   a lining - in a room hazed by dust
   Meriam (now – close up):
   What are we making?
   The boy (now - close up):
   Life wests
The sound of the sowing machines
   The boy (now - close up):
   You start with the front
   Then you do the back
   Then the zipper
                                                 Sara (in Izmir):
                                                 Can you pass me a piece of that foam?
   Filling it with foam
   Securing the seams
                                                 And a zipper
   And then the next
   And then another one
   This one is for a child
   size 6-9
                                                 No, – not that one. That's too long
Short pause
                                                 Sara (in Izmir):
                                                 So, where did you meet him?
                                                 Meriam (in Izmir):
                                                 Who?
                                                 Sara (in Izmir):
                                                 That boy
                                                 The one who's dreams came true?
                                                 Meriam (in Izmir):
                                                 At Fares
                                                 Sara (in Izmir):
                                                 And his dreams come true?
                                                 Meriam (in Izmir):
                                                 Fares said so
                                                 Sara (in Izmir):
                                                 Never believe a word he is saying.
                                                 Did he walk you home?
                                                 Meriam (in Izmir):
                                                 Who?
                                                 Sara (in Izmir):
                                                 That boy -
```

Meriam (in Izmir): No!? Sara (in Izmir): Did Fares walk you home? Meriam (in Izmir): Nobody walked me home. It wasn't like that One could walk wherever - take the buss It wasn't like it is here – now – There – Sara (in Izmir): Imagine. Of all possible places we had to end up here. I told him. I told Roch last time we chatted -Never ever, ever am I going to stay in this shithole - Never This is a really, really CRAPPY place I told him I'ts just not on Meriam (in Izmir): Sara (in Izmir): I just don't get it. Of all places in this whole fucking universe we had to end up here in the crappiest of all the crappy cities on the planet – and you know as well as I – that there is no such thing as dreams coming true – I asked Roch about it and he said so. All that is just superstition, he said. It's just something Fares made up, and Meriam, - Meriam, she is just a stupid little country girl – just like her brothers. Peasants, the lot of them. He said so. Meriam (in Izmir): Don't talk about my brothers -Sara (in Izmir): For all I know it's just some story you two have made up Don't talk about my brothers -Sara (In Izmir): Could you just tickle my back?

Sara stops sowing

I see them

Sara says:

The boy (now - close up):

The boy (now - close up):

The boy (now - close up):

Meriam says:

I sleep — and I see them
I am awake — and I see them

She says: Please Just a little You have taken the bus all the way here All the way to Turkey No, - don't stop Imagine if we just could stay like this. All day Every day Your father arranged it You are supposed to wait for them here A bit further down. There - that's lovely They'll come and get you Later when everything is ok Meriam (in Izmir): Do you like it like that? then you all can go together, to Europe Sara (in Izmir): Mmm -You're the best So - what did he say? That boy which dreams come true? Had he dreamt about you? Meriam (in Izmir): Silence The boy (now - close up): Sara and Meriam Meriam and Sara -You have a room a kettle a small fridge

They have your passports
They have given you these jobs
You fill the life vests with foam
and when the job is done

Sara is sifting through a magazine

You will get your passports back

One vest consists of 48 pieces You've counted them You count them

Meriam counting

Meriam (in Izmir): One, two, three, four, five ... The boy (now – close up):
And you pick up a piece of fabric then another then another
You are counting pieces
The cords

The lining at the front left The lining at the front right And you keep on counting Sara (in Izmir):
Why are you counting?

Meriam (in Izmir):
Twelve, thirteen, fourteen ...

Meriam (in Izmir): 11, 12, 13, 14

Sara (in Izmir): Who do you think decides which colour they use?

Meriam (in Izmir): I think they just use the cheapest fabric they can get hold of

Sara (in Izmir): Yes – but it's a real funky colour this one

Look – that's wrong – You are doing it wrong That section is in two parts Two parts, Meriam You need to cut that in two

Sara (in Izmir):

That's two different parts you have there!

Meriam (in Izmir): Hush I will get it all wrong if you keep on shouting like that —

492492 different parts

Yesterday I finished twelve vests – all together with all the pieces, the zippers and lining that's 492 different parts all together.

Sara (in Izmir): How does it matter how many pieces there are?

Pause

24, 25, 26 -

Sara (in Izmir): What, Meriam? What!

What are you laughing at?

Me?

What are you doing?

Stop that!

Stop throwing things at me?

The boy (now - close up):

For a long time, all I saw was darkness

Just darkness

No trees, no sweatshop, no Sara, no Meriam

Meriam (in Izmir - throwing a tube of

glue at Sara)
Take this one!
And this!

Just darkness

Darkness as I closed my eyes and darkness as I opened them

Sara (in Izmir):

Stop!

Meriam (in Izmir – throwing a roll of

fabric at Sara) And this!

Sara (in Izmir): Meriam – stop it!

Laughter. Breathing Just breathing

The boy (now – close up): At first it was like an echo

Meriam (in Izmir – short of breath): Foam does not float, you know

and I knew what it was

Sara (in Izmir – short of breath):

I know I'm not stupid

Sometimes I think that you think I am

stupid, but I'm not

It's that kind of dream that you dream

while you're awake You think I'm stupid

but I am not

It was driving me crazy

Meriam (in Izmir):

They fall over board, you know

I was awake - and I was dreaming

(making a ghostly voice)

they faaaall

Sara (in Izmir):

_

Meriam (in Izmir):

I've seen it

They buy these fake life vests, thinking they are for reel – and then they feel all

safe and secure and then /

I was awake – and I was dreaming

(in a whispering voice)

they faaaall

Sara (in Izmir – in a low voice):

Stop

I was under water

Meriam (in Izmir):

- and then the foam gets filled with water

and then /

I was drowning and I was still alive /

they sink

They sink and they sink

Deeper, deeper

/ and all around me

Meriam (in Izmir): Deeper and deeper –

Sara (in Izmir – a bit higher):

Stop it

Just stop!

/ everywhere

Meriam (in Izmir):

And then the foam becomes wet and

heavy And then

all these bodies

They just keep on sinking

white, naked, skinny

old and young mothers and fathers sons and daughters

brothers and sisters

> Sara (in Izmir): Can you stop it!

A beat

The boy (now - close up):

Sara writes Roch with capital letters on the mirror

Sara writes Roch with crayons on the floor

With lipstick

With whatever she can get hold of

She writes Roch on her arms

on her thighs

she lies on her back looking at her hands

She gets up

She's on her mobile

She puts on her headphones

Meriam says:

He is not there

Meriam (in Izmir):

```
I'm telling you – he is not there
   He wasn't online yesterday -
   he won't be online today
   Sara (in Izmir):
   I'm not talking to you
   Meriam (in Izmir):
   He won't answer
   Sara (in Izmir):
   I am not talking to you
   I am talking to Roch
   Meriam (in Izmir):
   He's not there
   He is not on Facebook
   He's not chatting
   All the time you say that he is there, – but he is not.
   You are just pretending to be chatting with him.
   Sara (in Izmir):
   Says whom?
   Meriam (in Izmir):
   You are just pretending to annoy me
   He's gone
   Sara (in Izmir):
   He's not gone
   He's fine
   Roch's fine
   He is not like your stupid brothers
   He'll make it
   He always does
   He's just
   Meriam (in Izmir):
   If that's what you want to believe
   Sara (in Izmir – she gets up):
   I hate this place!
   I hate this job!
   I hate you
Meriam (in Izmir):
Wow - that's a really, really grown up thing to say
   Really, really mature
                                                  The boy (now - close up):
                                                  Sara takes a life vest
   Meriam (in Izmir):
   Sara
                                                  She starts tearing up the seams
   You – I did not mean to
   Sara
                                                  She starts pulling out the foam - then she
                                                  takes another
```

What are you doing?

```
Stop it!
                                                  and another
                                                  She is shouting
                                                  She is pulling them apart
                                                  There is no stopping her
   Why are you tearing them apart?
                                                  She is going through a pile
                                                  Tearing it all to shreds
                                                  Throwing them on the floor
                                                  Stepping on them
   Meriam (in Izmir):
   Sara!
   You mustn't
   You can't -
   Give me that! That there is a whole day's work!
   Sara!
   Don't!
   Sara
                                                  The boy (now - close up):
                                                  She pushes her aside
   Sara (in Izmir):
   Let me!
   Meriam (in Izmir):
   I'm sorry
   I was just kidding – sure you will hear from Roch
   Sure there will be a message for you – just wait and see
   Sara (in Izmir):
   Let me be!
   Meriam (in Izmir):
   Sara stop it!
                                                  The boy (now - close up):
                                                  Sara turns the table
                                                  Sara breaks a mug
   Sara (in Izmir):
   Leave me alone!
   Meriam (in Izmir):
   Look at me, Sara!
   Look at me!
Breathing
                                                  They are standing in chaos. In rolls of
                                                  fabric, of broken life vests, in piles of
                                                  zippers and foam
Silence
   Sara (in Izmir):
   Oh no.
   Oh no, oh no.
   Oh Sara – you shouldn't have
   Oh dear – What have I done
   What are we going to do now?
   What are we going to do? Meriam?
   What shall we say?
```

```
What will they say?
   Oh no
   I've ruined everything, haven't I?
   Meriam, say something.
Silence
A beat
   The boy (now - close up):
   Meriam walks through fields of corn
   Meriam cuts her hair off with a knife
   She is knee deep in sand
   She wipes off her mouth, her face
   She is talking to her brothers
   She says: Here, but no further
   She says: This is my place now
   She is stamping her feet
   She whispers:
   Sara
   My sister
   Why is it so dark?
   She is lying at the bottom of the stairs
   A man stands over her with his fist raised
   He is hitting her repeatedly
   He owns the floor she is lying on
   The food in her mouth
   The clothes she is wearing
   Her skirt is black as tar around her ankles
   He hits her with his hand, with his knuckles
   She has closed her eyes
   She stands facing a field of corn
   she walks through it
   At the end she can see them
   she has five brothers
   they are waiting for her
   She tries to speak, but her mouth has deserted her, and his fists rains down on
   She is a desolate building
   She is as barren as bone
   Look
   look at her sinking
   Sinking into a mountain of orange
   of soft foam
   Meriam (in Izmir):
   Sara
   Sara
   I cannot breathe
   I cannot breathe, Sara
   Sara (in Izmir):
   Take my hand!
   Meriam (in Izmir):
   I can't breathe
   Sara (in Izmir):
   Take my hand, Meriam
   Stand up
```

Come on!

```
He has left now
   You have to get up before he comes back -
   Do it
   Take it.
   Take my hand
   That's the way.
   That's my girl
   I knew you could do it.
   Just hold on to me
   Just hold on to me, you are alright now.
   Look at you
   Look at me
   Let me wash your face
Silence – for a long time
   Meriam (in Izmir):
   We lived -
   Sara (in Izmir):
   Hush
   Meriam (in Izmir):
   We lived in the smallest village
   Sara (in Izmir):
   Hush
   Don't talk
   Meriam (in Izmir):
   It must have been the smallest village in the whole world
   Three houses
   Just rocks
   Sara – do you hear what I am saying?
   Sara (in Izmir):
   I hear you
   Hush - You don't need to say anything
   You don't need to talk
   Don't talk, Meriam
   You don't need to say anything
   Meriam (in Izmir):
   Oh - Christ I'm thirsty
   Could you get me some water?
   Sara (in Izmir):
   Here
Meriam drinks
   Sara (in Izmir):
   You didn't have to do it
   You did not have to say it was you - you who did it
   You really didn't
   When it was me
   I who did it
```

```
Meriam finishes drinking
```

```
Meriam (in Izmir):
   Thanks
   Sara (in Izmir):
   Let me have a look at that eye
   Shit
   Don't touch it!
   Leave it alone -
   You did not need to
   Say what you did - when it was never -
   he never ever would have hit me
   He never has
   Meriam
   He's never hit me
Silence
   The boy (now - close up):
   How quiet it is
   Meriam (now – close up):
   What is it – are you crying?
   The boy (now - close up):
   Am I?
   Meriam (now – close up):
   We'll manage
   The boy (now - close up):
   Will we?
   That's what they tell us, isn't it?
   That we are going to manage it.
   That everything is going to be alright –
   and we believe it, don't we?
   They tell it to us, and we believe them:
   The life vests will keep us afloat
   Your brothers will come home
   We will all soon be home again
   Things will get better, you'll see
   As soon as we get the job done
   As soon as the war is over
   As soon as we pay for the food,
   for the journey, for the room
   Sara (in Izmir):
   Hush
   Hush Meriam
   Hush – It's alright
   I promise
   All you need is just a little bit of rest
```

There you are

```
The boy (now - close up):
I am not dreaming
I am wide awake
Sara is bony and restless
She is grasping for Meriam
for her hand in her sleep
she cannot find it
She is not there
She is somewhere else – she is pacing the room
She leaves it
She is standing in the hall
It's night-time
She knows it won't work
That she has nowhere to go
- What will you do without money?
Out there without anyone
She stands there
I see you
You want to leave this place and never come back,
but you don't know how
Meriam (now - close up):
You see me?
The boy (now - close up):
Yes
Meriam (now – close up):
Are you there?
The boy (now - close up):
I am here
Meriam (now – close up):
We are there together?
The boy (now - close up):
We're in the hallway
Meriam (now – close up):
Everybody else is asleep
The boy (now - close up):
Yes
Meriam (now – Close up):
So what happens now?
The boy (now - close up):
I am where you are
Meriam (now – close up):
Where are we going?
The boy (now - close up):
```

Where do you want to go?

```
Meriam (now - close up):
Out
Am I going out?
The boy (now - close up):
Meriam (now – close up):
I do not have the courage
The boy (now - close up):
But you do it anyway
Meriam (now – close up):
I am leaving the building
What am I doing?
The boy (now - close up):
You are running
You are running down the street
You are running in the rain
You haven't been running for the longest time
But now you are
You are running like it's no tomorrow
Through streets and alleys
Past shops selling life vests and kitchen appliances
past supermarkets and petrol stations
Meriam (now – close up):
Where am I going?
The boy (now - close up):
Away from here
You are standing in a roundabout
Izmir is all around you
It's a breathing, living, giant animal
You have made up your mind
You are going to find your brothers
Meriam (now – close up):
Why are you dreaming this?
Never mind
I like it
In a dream, everything is possible - right?
If you dream this, then anything could happen?
The boy (now - close up):
I don't think this is my dream, Meriam
Meriam (now – close up):
It isn't?
The boy (now - close up):
No.
Meriam (now – close up):
Is it me?
Is it me – dreaming you?
```

```
It this my dream? And in this dream I can be anywhere I want?
   Even in your room?
   The boy (now - close up):
   Even in my room
In the boy's room in Aleppo
Maybe sounds of war
   Meriam (now – close up):
   It's so stuffy in this place
   Why can't we open the window? Let in some air?
   Just for a minute?
She opens the window
The sound of gunshots in the distance
   Meriam (now – close up):
   Did you here that?
They listen
   Meriam (now – close up):
   Is it getting closer?
   The boy (now - close up):
   Every day a little closer
   Meriam (now – close up):
   And no lights
   Why do you have the light on? Nobody else in the city has the lights on
   Shouldn't we turn the lights out?
   The boy (now - close up):
   Wait just a moment -
   I want to see you
Steps outside the door
   The boy's mother (now):
   Are you there?
   Are you still awake?
   The boy (now - close up):
   Hush
   The boy's mother (now):
   Why have you turned the lights on?
The door opens
   The boy's mother (now):
   I'm coming in – But darling –Turn it off at once! You can not have the lights on
   And the window is open – Why did you open that window!
   You can't – You just cannot do things like that!
He shuts the window
   The boy's mother (now):
   Christ, how many times do I have to tell you!
   You know that - standing here with all the lights on and the window
```

```
Turn it off
   You are not the only one living in this building!
   What were you thinking about!
   You're just like your father
   The boy (now):
Silence
   The boy's mother (now):
   But darling boy - what's the matter?
   What's on your mind?
   You know that you just cannot turn the lights on like that
                                                 The boy (now - close up):
                                                 In the dream I am not here
                                                 In the dream I cross a border
                                                 In a dream you are running in the rain
   What's the matter?
                                                 Meriam (now – close up):
                                                 Yes
   The boy (now):
   It's -
   The boy's mother (now):
                                                 The boy (now):
                                                 In the dream I am not alone
                                                 In the dream you are with me
                                                 You are in my room
                                                 We have turned the lights on
                                                 My mother is there together with us
                                                 In a moment, she will be leaving
                                                 Meriam (now - close up):
                                                 I know
   The boy (now):
   Nothing
   The boy's mother (now):
   I don't understand
   The boy (now):
   It just isn't - working
   The boy's mother (now):
   What's not working?
   I don't know what to say -
   Those dreams – it will pass
   The boy (now):
   Do you believe that?
   The boy's mother (now):
   I don't know what to believe – but you have to sleep
   You cannot be afraid of going to sleep every night
   You wear yourself out -
   Just one more night
   One more night – you can do that?
```

```
The boy (now):
   The boy's mother (now):
   Go to bed now
   Tomorrow - everything will be alright
   I promise
Silence
   Meriam (now - close up):
   Has she left?
   The boy (now - close up):
   Meriam (now – close up):
   Are we still here?
   The boy (now - close up):
   No-not any more
   We are some place else
   On a beach
   You have a life vest in your left hand
   Meriam (now – close up):
   What do we see?
   The boy (now - close up):
   The ocean
   Boats
   Meriam (now – close up):
   What do I see?
   The boy (now - close up):
   Boats approaching
   People waiting by the shore – your father, your mother and – /
   Meriam (now – close up):
   - my brothers -
   I can see them!
   The boy (now - close up):
   - your father's taking hold of the stem
   Meriam (now – close up):
   I try to wave to him, but he does not see me
   They are there
   all of them
   the boy (now - close up):
   They are boarding the boats now
   Picking up their luggage - and you can hear your fathers voice
   He is saying: We can do this
                                                 Meriam's father (in the dream)
                                                 We can do this
                                                 We are going to be fine
   We are going to be fine
```

And your mother climbs on board And your brothers climb on board

```
Meriam (now - close up):
   and I run towards them
                                                 No!
                                                 Leave that
   And I shout
   And nobody hears me
                                                 Just leave that bag
                                                 There is no way we can bring it all
   The boy (now - close up):
   And they have started the engines
Sound of boats starting up their engines
   The boy (now - close up):
   And your brothers /
   Meriam (now – close up):
   climb on board
   and the boats leave the shore
   The boy (now - close up):
   You are there
   standing at the beach
   Meriam (now – close up):
   They are alright, - aren't they?
   They will make it – won't they?
   The boy (now - close up):
   Meriam (now – close up):
   The sea is smooth, and grey and shiny
   The boats are heavy in the water
   They are slowly filling up
   There is water to the brim
   They are going to sink, aren't they?
   The boy (now - close up):
   And you wade into it
   Meriam (now - close up):
   Look at them!
   The boy (now - close up):
   You are wading to your knees, your hips, your breasts
   Meriam (now – close up):
   Look at that man
   Lifting his child
   Lifting his child out and away from the water
   The boy (now - close up):
   You are in water until your neck
   Meriam (now - close up):
   Why must I see this?
   The boy (now - close up):
   I don't know
   Meriam (now – close up):
```

Why must I see this?

```
The boy (now - close up):
   Meriam (now – close up):
   There is water all around me
   The boy (now - close up):
   Yes
   Meriam (now – close up):
   It's freezing. I'm wet
   I'm alone
   I am afraid. I don't want to be here!
   The boy (now – close up):
   I am here
   Meriam (now – close up):
   I cannot stay here
   The boy (now - close up):
   We can hold on to each other
   Meriam (now – close up):
   We cannot stay here
   The boy (now - close up):
   I've got you
   Meriam (now - close up):
   You've got me
   The boy (now - close up):
   I'll hold on to you /
   Meriam (now – close up):
   I don't want to do this anymore
   They won't make it, will they!
   They won't!
   I'm afraid
   Wake me up!
Silence
A beat
   Meriam (now – close up):
   It was just bad luck
   That
   boat was not good enough
   The boat was shit, that's all
   Short pause
                                                 Sara (in Izmir – far away)
                                                 Meriam!
                                                 Meeeriam!
   Did you hear that?
   The boy (now - close up):
```

```
Meriam (now – close up):
   What was that?
                                                 Meriaaaam
   The boy (now - close up):
   That's Sara
   Meriam (now – close up):
   What's she doing?
   The boy (now - close up):
   Looking for you
                                                 Where are you!
They listen
                                                 Meriam, whe e e e e e e e e e e are
                                                 you!
Far away in the distance, a window is opened. We can hear the sounds of a big city, - Izmir
   Meriam (now – close up):
   No - don't open the window-
   Leave it alone Sara!
   Leave it.
   They don't like it!
   Shut it!
   Just shut that window!
   Stop calling my name!
Silence
   Meriam (now – close up):
   Am I awake now?
   The boy (now - close up):
   Soon
Long silence
   Meriam (now – close up):
   I dream that there are five ways to die
   A bullet in the back
   drowning in ones own spit
   while watching the roof collapse
   having ones neck broken
   being buried in rubble
   I dream of captivity
   of starvation
   of a knife through my cheek, my chest
   cut wide open and it isn't me
   It's my dream - but it
   Isn't me
   I'm awake and I'm alive
   I'm awake and I'm alive
                                                 The boy (now - close up):
                                                 Sara is wearing a yellow dress
                                                 her face is the sun rising
                                                 Meriam's in the hallway
```

Wait Sara

Don't call anybody

Don't go running down the stairs
Don't go knocking on those doors
Do not wake the aunties
the owner
the sisters in the front room
she's here
She's on her way back
Soon
Soon
Soon – you will see her

```
Silence
Meriam enters the room
   Meriam (in Izmir):
   Hi
   Sara (in Izmir):
   Where have you been?
   Why don't you answer me?
   Come over here!
   Meriam (in Izmir):
   Ouch!!
   Sara (in Izmir):
   Your soaked.
   Take off that jumper.
   Just do what I tell you to
   Be still!
   Now – let me dry your hair
   Don't move
   Christ – I've been waiting and waiting – I thought I was going to go mad – all
   night long, all night long, Meriam
   And the stockings!
   Here
   Lift your arms up
   Just lean on me
   Just do it – you are shivering girl
Silence
A beat
   Sara (in Izmir):
   Where have you been
   Meriam (in Izmir):
   Out
   Sara (in Izmir):
   Out?
   Whereabouts - "out"?
   Meriam (in Izmir):
```

```
Sara (in Izmir):
   Stop kidding with me -
   Meriam (in Izmir):
   Sara (in Izmir):
   So where did you go?
   Where did you go?
   Where?
   Meriam (in Izmir):
   Just out
   Sara (in Izmir):
   Without me?
   Meriam (in Izmir):
   I just had to
   Sara (in Izmir):
   Alone?
   Leaving me here
   Meriam (in Izmir):
   I'm here now
   Sara (in Izmir):
   So - what did you do?!?
   Meriam (in Izmir):
   I ran
  Sara (in Izmir):
Silence
   Meriam (in Izmir - in a low voice)
   We can't stay here
   I can't stay here
   Sara (in Izmir):
  And then you thought — that you — out there
   But how?
   Where would we go?
   What would we do, Meriam?
   I mean – where would we live
   On the street like?
   You and me
   On the street?
   No way
   There is no way I can do that
   I'll wait here
   Until we hear from them
   Until they come and get us
   Just say it
```

```
Just say that we are not going anywhere
   Say it!
   Meriam (in Izmir):
   We are not going anywhere
   Silence
   Meriam (in Izmir):
   We'll be fine
   All will be fine, Sara
   Sara (in Izmir):
No, it won't. He'll beat the shit out of us.
They'll kill us if he finds out that you've been out.
   Promise never to do that. Promise that you will never do that again
   Meriam (in Izmir):
   I promise
   Sara
   I'm here now
   I promise
                                                  The boy (now - close up):
                                                  Meriam is in Sara's embrace as the sun
                                                  traverse the city smoky brown
   Sara (in Izmir):
   Can't you sleep?
   Meriam (in Izmir):
   It's just my eye
   Sara (in Izmir):
   Does it hurt?
   When you went out -
   Meriam (in Izmir):
   The door was open
   Sara (in Izmir):
   What was you thinking?
   Meriam (in Izmir):
   I wasn't
   Sara (in Izmir):
   You just
   Meriam (in Izmir):
   I had to get away from here /
   Sara (in Izmir):
   And then you ran
   down the streets
   Meriam (in Izmir):
   I couldn't let it pass
   Him hitting me
   They've taken everything
```

It just won't do

```
I won't have it – for my brothers for you for us
```

It can't go on like this

The boy (now – close up): And so you went out running through the rain not able to stop

and then you saw this bus shed

Meriam (in Izmir): All I wanted was to sit down Just sit – for a while – away from the rain To get my breath back

> The boy (now – close up): And your eye hurts and your mouth aches

Meriam (in Izmir): I thought – but this – this just won't do I just had to get out of that place It was intolerable

I just had to rest for a while — and I sat there In the shed and the rain fell and I must have dosed off for a moment and then

Sara (in Izmir): And then

Meriam (in Izmir): And then I was back here with you

Silence

The boy (now – close up):

Meriam with her back to the world

Meriam in somebody else's dream

Meriam – the sister who has no brothers

Meriam in nothing but darkness

She says:

Wake me

5.

The boy (now – close up):

I am dreaming everything back to what it was:

Fares cycling down the street with a box of chickens on the back of his bike Meriam eating an apple

Her red jumper

Her hand on mine and the whole world all of a sudden all lit up

Fares' shop the dogs the kids the streetlights the back yards the evening sky I am in what might be the last night or the first night

I've dreamt it many times before There are so many dreams One on top of the other

Meriam (in Izmir – talking to Sara):
I dreamt about the two of us
We were walking across Europe
crossing the Turkish border
the Serbian border and onwards through Russia and it was winter
it just kept on snowing
as we crossed yet another border on our bikes
deep in snow

It was such a strange dream
This place we came to — it was so forsaken, so barren
You hardly saw a face
Just the road we were on and then a church
and a few miles later
a store
and there
there was a school
and people welcoming us
they've put matrasses down on the floor /

Sara (in Izmir – continuing the story):
And the first night we sleep there
In that school – and the next day the school is a hotel and we take the elevator
All the way up to the top
The tenth floor, the twelfth floor
And there
All the way up at the top there is a Jacuzzi and everything /

Meriam (in Izmir): Not in my dream it wasn't

Sara (in Izmir – just continuing on her version of the dream):

And from up there we could see everything

The store

And the church

And kids on their way to school

Everything

An aeroplane taking off

The sea

And tons of islands

And far out there big tankers

and all the way over to the other side

to the United States and Turkey and Aleppo /

Meriam (in Izmir):

- and Roch has just gotten out of bed

He wakes up in the middle of the night thinking about you

He is going to write to you

today

he is going to write to you

Sara (in Izmir):

And here

In Izmir

They are opening the shop on the ground floor

And the aunties are putting the kettle on – and they know nothing about all this

Where we've been

```
What we've dreamt
What we've seen
```

Meriam (in Izmir):

You have such lovely hair, Sara

Silence

```
Sara (in Izmir):
   And everybody
   in the whole of this house
   in the whole of this city
   in the whole, wide world -/
   Meriam (in Izmir):
   - None of them knows what we can do
   Sara (in Izmir):
   That we can cross borders
   Meriam (in Izmir):
   That you are a supernova
   Sara (in Izmir):
   That you are a time-traveller
   Meriam (in Izmir):
   That you are a beam of pure energy
   Sara (in Izmir):
   That we can bicycle through snowstorms
   Meriam (in Izmir):
   Cut across Europe when nobody is watching /
   Sara (in Izmir):
   - through outer space if we want too
   That you have kissed a boy who's dreams come through
   Meriam (in Izmir):
   Almost kissed a boy who's dreams come through
Silence
   Sara (in Izmir):
   Do you know what I have in my pocket?
   A pit
   From a plum, from the tree back home
   Meriam (in Izmir):
   Sara (in Izmir):
   When we get back
   I am going to plant it
   I know exactly where I am going to do it
   on that sunny spot you know - right behind the shed
   right by where the old clotheshorse used to be
   The earth is rich there, and one can
   bring a chair out, in the afternoons
                                                 The boy (now - close up):
                                                 Sara is combing her hair
                                                 The sun's bright on the floorboards
                                                 In the mirror
                                                 And you say:
```

I wish I had hair like you

The boy (now - close up):

And while you are sitting there, you

discover that

she has grown - Sara

Meriam (in Izmir): I think you have grown

That soon she will be as tall as you

Christ Sara -

Soon you'll be as tall as me

The sound of war, of Aleppo in the distance as a faint noise

I see them

Gunshots getting closer

I'm asleep, and I'm awake and I see them Sara is a flowering tree Her arms heavy with plums as she keeps on growing: one meter, two meters all lit up, as walls tumbles

The girls are crossing a cornfield The field is aflame and

The sound of gunshots grows loud and clear

The boy (now – close up):
Just wind
Just dancing dust

I'm here in Aleppo

There is shouting in the street

My mother is with me

The boy's mother (now):

I told you!

Get away from that window!

Get away from it!

The boy (now – close up and soon far away):

And a gunshot breaks the glass

crosses the room and smashes into the wall behind us

And another hits the floor at the left of my feet

and somewhere in the eastern suburb a hospital is turned into rubble

as twelve families gets buried in the rubble

and the window brakes

and my mother opens her mouth to say something - the look on her face

confused, bewildered

and I can feel something warm running down my nose

my cheeks

the taste of metal

And then no more

just the world crowned with light

all white

all shiny

And inside that light I can see Meriam putting her hand on mine

She is a key

she is my second skin

Further down the street Sara runs in her yellow dress

And as she runs - further and further away from us -

her eyes change colour

She is a boy
she is a boy who's dreams come true
She is as sharp as a bird's beak
She is a dried out little heart
She wipes her mouth off her face and we are
nobody
The light surrounds us and we are
nobody

She is running into a crowd She is surrounded She is gone and then we disappear

THE END

Darkness – The enemy inside

A collaborative play by Kristin Eìriksdottìr, Gianluca Iumiento, Tale Næss, Sigbjørn Skåden og Albert Ostermeier Assembled by head-writer and dramaturge Tale Næss

Characters:

Julian

Kate

Emil

Lina

Hunter 1

Hunter 2

and four children pretending to be animals

All actors are on stage all the time The scenes and actions run parallel more often than not. Sometimes they overlap

The text in italics can be read as stage directions

They could also, or as well, be shared between the performers, read by one actor, or shared between the performers representing the children

The text in brackets is not be read

PART 1 - IN THE BEGINNING

The characters enter the stage
The children are watching from afar
Each of them locked up in a room, in a cupboard, in a grown person's life

They own the statue of the little girl with the matchsticks They own all these Danish statues of white children grimacing They own these candlesticks

They own these hand-made coasters
They own this A frican quilt

They own this African quilt

They own this silk

They own this linen

They own these napkin-rings

They own this silver

They own these silver spoons

They own these silver forks

They own these silver knives

They own this painting of dancing women

They own this painting of a quiet man

They own this painting of forms and colors

They own this Turkish rug

They own this old porcelain

They own this stereo

They own these speakers

They own this TV They own this sofa table They own this chair They own this chair as well And this chair And this chair The room is empty Julian: I had a dream Kate: A dream? Julian: I saw this rock that looked like a giant head A face floating like - And the sun was setting Kate: That's beautiful Julian: I wouldn't call it beautiful It was more It was like floating, tipping ever so slowly – up and down in the water A gigantic face, tipping in the water, as the sun sets I call that beautiful (Silence) Julian: We have everything we need, don't we? We do - don't we? Kate: Yes, it's so lovely here on this island - this time of year Julian: It's not an island Kate: Julian: It's not an island – it's a peninsula. You keep calling it an island – but it is a peninsula. That's where we live I don't like the way you're looking at me right now Kate: How am I looking at you? Julian Like It's my fault Like I've done something wrong

Kate:

Like I have a smoking gun in my hand

I'm looking at you like someone who knows that something is about to happen Something terrible with our children

```
As they speak, the children start filling the room with objects
with china, tables, forks and table clothes
bicycles, books, stairways and staircases
napkins and napkin-rings
   the Squirrel:
   Look at this napkin ring!
   the Fox:
   Look at this picture of white children grimacing
   the Squirrel:
   Look at this painting of a quiet man
(the Badger picks up battle axe)
   the Crocodile:
   That's mine!
   the Fox:
   That's mine!
   the Squirrel:
   Leave it alone
(The Badger lifts the axe. Swings it)
   the Squirrel:
   He claimed it!
   the Crocodile:
   I claimed it!
   the Fox:
   Watch it – or he'll chop your heads off!
(Laughter)
   Lina:
   They gritted their teeth and celebrated Christmas together
   They only did it for us
   They only did it because of us
   Because we were their children
   She got us and the house and all the stuff but he got nothing at all
   He left and she stayed and she never threw anything out
   She just packed the drawers without even looking through them,
   just bagged them and taped them. There was just this old random mess
   To think how she carried this ugly old mug with her, from apartment to
   apartment, since early in the nineties
   Julian:
   It's going to get better
   Lina:
   So – I saw this badger
   Julian:
   Where?
   Lina:
```

In the garden

```
Julian:
   Shit. You know, when they bite, they don't stop until they feel the bones
   Lina:
   Yeah. Until it crunches. It's so nasty
   Maybe we were all badgers once
   My husband is one for sure
(Lina does a funny badger face)
   Julian:
   That's right. That's how he looks! Definitely a badger!
   Julian:
   Do you think it's gone?
   What? The badger?
   Julian:
   Yes, the badger
   Lina:
   I think it is. I guess it was migrating from the forest to the water or something
   like that. I'm not an expert
   Ah – it's lovely on this island this time of year
   Don't you just love the flowers and -
   Julian:
   It's not an island
   Lina:
   Excuse me -
   Julian:
   It is not an island
   Don't say that
   Lina:
   Say what?
   Julian:
   That it's an island
   It's a peninsula
   It's inaccurate
   An island is inaccurate
   An island have water
   It's surrounded by water
   This is not an island
   Lina:
   Whatever
   Julian:
   You all call it an island, but it's not – it's a peninsula, we live on a
   peninsula, a peninsula that's where we live so why does everybody go on
```

calling it an island!

```
(A beat)
   Julian:
   It was not enough
   A house, a garden, out of the center, close to the water,
   perfect for kids
   We came in the marked, such a luck, we were relieved
   My wife - She works less, I work more, she wants more, she wants more of me
   We went to the mountains, the snow went away ... it's not global warming. It's
   spring, we were too late
The children are watching him
A father
A breadwinner
   the Squirrel:
   Who is there?
Says the Squirrel
   the Fox:
   Who's there?
Says the Fox
   the Crocodile:
   That's my father
Says the Crocodile
   the Squirrel:
   He is funny
   the Fox:
   He is mental
   the Squirrel:
   He is /
   the Crocodile:
   a hyper carnivore apex predator.
(Pause)
   A friend of mine returned from Peru the other day
   He had taken part in this ritual
   He had taken this old magic red Indian medicine – this tea called St. Pedro
   and he said that it was extra-ordinary
   that when he walked on the grass – it was as if it was electric
   as if the energy floated from the grass, up through his feet from the earth itself
   He touched the water
   and it was alive - he touched the stones
   and they were warm
   He felt this energy flowing through the logs that were holding up the maloca
   like this glowing green field surrounding everything – holding everything
   together and he said:
   You know
   all things reach upwards
   the trees, the plants - towards the light
   and I can't stop thinking about that
```

I think about it when I shower when I do my pilates, my yoga when I drive the children to the kindergarten go to work sit there by the drawing board looking at the city plans the allotments the lintels, the buttresses, thinking about the keystones imagining it all - tied together by this green field of energy - thinking about high-rises, office blocks, this new apartment block I am working on right now - Like trees like plants stretching themselves upwards - electrified whole cities held together by this invisible force even the cells in our body the molecules in our DNA - and then my heart skips a beat just skips a beat thinking about what would happen if it disappeared if the connection all of a sudden broke the energy gone - if the current turned how the molecules would fall away from each other how the cells in our skin no longer would cling to the cells in our flesh how the buttresses no longer would hold unto the columns as the keystone tore itself away from the arches, how the arches would collapse as the streets started to drift away from each other buildings, rivers, mountains floating in a free falling, tumbling chaos and I pinch myself and I look up at the sky and I look at my children the way they run, laugh, how they smell in their sleep and I want to hold on to them just hold on to them like tie them to my chest and never let go (Silence) Julian: We got this second kid We ended up where she wanted to be with the kids in this suuuuper Steiner place a kindergarten in the woods – that is beautiful but not very practical And then there was this problem What to do with the car? This electric car? So I got this Quasqai It's big. It's safe. It's good for the kids It drives on gasoline, well hell! But I just could not get rid of the other one, the electric one – So now I have two Two cars I try to feel good about myself The planet won't die Kate: You are lying Julian: Am I? Kate: Yes

Julian:

You are right

Kate:

So why did you say it then?

Julian:

For you my dear

For you

The ferry leaves the shore a bird in the bushes a hoover craft And Julian says:

Julian:

Let me fuck you up!

Let me give you a good time!

Let me take you for a ride in my Batmobile!

The Fox lurks under the bed

The Crocodile that is a child makes scary sounds at the breakfast table

Julian:

Let's face it, this place is unbearable

It's claustrophobic

They all smile at you, they all seem friendly

But deep, deep inside, you have no idea about what they are thinking

And then one day BOOM! You get stabbed!

You get killed! Just like this! BOOM! Without a notice

Paranoia, this is the home of paranoia

And we are all guilty for not screaming, for not opposing

We are all guilty because we prefer to be invisible

PART 2 - THE HUNTERS

We have water all

We have water all around us

We have so much water it feels like an island

An island so huge we almost forget

We have seasons, beautiful and long with colors and leaves and storms

We have it all

We have it all

We have it all

(The children are running around in circles)

The Squirrel:

I have a tail!

the Fox:

I have a hoof!

the Crocodile:

I have fangs!

the Fox:

I have the sharpest teeth!

The Crocodile:

I have the sharpest teeth, the biggest grin, superpowers, handicaps, life-skills,

love, a jar filled with sprogs, with jellyfish, heartache

The Fox:

We have a battle axe!

The Crocodile:
Off with their heads!

The Badger: Grrrrroooaawllllle

The children are hiding in the cupboards
In the basements
In the sewers
In the innards of a roundabout
They are bumping into furniture
Into shelfs and wardrobe-doors

the Crocodile: Look at me now!

Says the Crocodile

the Squirrel: Look at me now!

Says the Squirrel

the Crocodile:

Listen to the sounds I make

the Squirrel:

Who is to be the bee?

the Fox:

Who is to be the beaver?

the Badger:

Hzzzakkkettettetthzzz

This is an island so huge you could even get lost
This is an island so huge we almost forget – its forests and lakes
valleys and mountaintops
beaches and farms
all drowning in the darkness of the woods
littered with rabbit-holes
with fox-holes
dens and hives
two hunters by a creek
waiting for their coffee to boil

Hunter 1:

Strange. It's a place, out there - where the waves break

Hunter 2:

Yes, that's the Marbakke

Hunter 1: Marbakken

Hunter 2:

Where it suddenly gets deep

Hunter 1: I see (Silence) Hunter 1: It's the sun. And the wind, – like now – like a head in the waves. A daudinghode. Where the waves break. It appears when the wind turns and then - I've seen it. It breaks the surface - a dead man's head Hunter 2: Can't say I have. Seen it, sitting here, seeing the sun go down – I've been here so many times Hunter 1: It's the wind, when it turns. I was a child the first time I saw it. Up by Krokelva. Its high ground up there. It's easy to see it from up high, but you can see it here too Hunter 2: I've never heard anybody else mention anything like that - that there is a daudinghode in Vågen Hunter 1: They all know it, and nobody talks about it (Short silence) Hunter 2: That guy, Kroken. Wasn't he still around when you were a child? Hunter 1: Was he? I don't know. I can't remember Hunter 2: He must still have been around when you were that age Hunter 1: No. Not in this area. Not as far as I remember Hunter 2: It was a shooting accident wasn't it? That deformed his hand? Hunter 1: No, he was born that way The badger is packing a battle axe The Squirrel: Where are you going?

The Fox:

He's going nowhere

He is packing a comb a torch a packet of chewing gum

> The Crocodile: He's going somewhere

The Fox:

Let's get out of here!

Let's just get lost! The Squirrel: I am going nowhere The Fox: If he's going somewhere - I'm going somewhere The Crocodile: Who is a coward? Says the Crocodile The Fox: Not me! Says the Fox: The badger is humming The Squirrel: Look – if we are going like for good -We should bring some cash The Fox: We don't need cash The Squirrel: We do! The Fox: I am bringing my swimsuit! The Squirrel: Are we leaving a note? Says the Squirrel The Crocodile: Who is a bat, is a rat, is a beaver? Says the Crocodile (Silence A beat) Come shooting with me Lina: Shooting? At what? What do you want to shoot at? Emil: Just at anything at all. We could shoot at some seagulls or at some critters or at this mug your mother left you that you hate so, so much or just at the sky ... No thank you. I don't even know you! Do you have a gun? Emil:

I have plenty of guns, we could leave right now and I could let you try all sorts of guns, a shotgun, a handgun, a rifle. I even have a machine gun Lina: And where could we fire all these guns? Emil: At my place You can sleep at my place We could drink some more We could just go on a shooting spree You could shoot at my stuff At my paintings My china My silverware My pots and pans A fox A badger My horse Lina: Not your horse Emil: Not my horses But anything else Lina: Anything? Emil: Absolutely anything Lina: It's just ... I haven't even put on make-up or showered or anything Emil: You are fine just the way you are Lina: Right. Emil: No, I mean it. I prefer you like this I always like you best just in your leisure wear Lina: My husband always says Emil: Your husband is a badger Lina: But you have never seen me in -Emil: It is up to you Lina: Hang on Do I have time to get my purse?

It's just I don't like not having my phone ... or money

Emil: Just come

Lina lies deep in grass. Can you see her? She is a turtle too big for her shell She is a princess shedding her skin

PART 3 - CHILDREN ON THE RUN

The wood is green and deep and endless there – where four animals are making their way through the thickets Who is there in the water? Who is there resting in the woods?

> The Squirrel: We shouldn't be here

The Badger, The Fox and the Crocodile:

_

The Squirrel:
We are not allowed
You know it
We should not cross that bridge
We should not swim that river

The Fox: A puddle!

The Crocodile: Let's cross it

The Fox: Let's jump it! Let's splash around

The Squirrel: I want to go home

The Crocodile:

Here comes the boogieman

Says the crocodile

The Fox:

Here comes the hammerfish

Says the Fox

Emil:

Have you ever shot a gun before?

Lina:

No, never.

Have you ever shot anyone?

Emil: Many

Lina:

Who then died?

Emil:

I'm very precise Lina: Always in self-defense? What do you think? Yes, maybe just start with this one. Look, now it's loaded, here, just aim, and pull the trigger See Lina: Wow, it's heavy Is it still loaded? Emil: Yes, just go crazy Shoot (Lina goes crazy, shooting at everything A beat) The children are crossing the creek They are never coming home By a roadside a man stands bent over a flat tire cursing: Bugger Bugger Bugger, ass, puke, shit, bugger! Bugger me! As he continues to curse Blasted Cunt! Cunt-face! Ass! Cunt-ass Damn, damned, bugger, ass-bugger, motherfucker, fuck! Fuck, fuck, fuck As he calms down. As he is saying: I wish I was a child again I wish I was a child I wish I was a fireman I wish I was a goldfish swimming in my goldfish-bowl Saying: Do you have any tranquilizers? Saying: Show me your bags Show me your hands Show me your teeth Show me your hopes and dreams Show me your secret selves Show me the way home Tell me my name Tell me my name Tell me my name

The children watch him

The Squirrel:

What's wrong with him?

He is crying

```
Says the Squirrel
  the Crocodile:
  He wants a new name
Says the Crocodile
  The Fox:
  What name shall we give him?
  The Squirrel:
  Maybe he already has a name
  Maybe somebody has taken his name away from him
  The Crocodile:
  He wants a new name, stupid
  The Squirrel:
  Don't you like your name?
  The Fox:
  Do we think he deserves one?
  The Squirrel:
  Everyone should have a name
  The Fox:
  What kind of name do you want?
  The Squirrel:
  Like a human name?
  Or/
  The Fox:
  – like our names?
  The Squirrel:
  I have a name for him!
  The Crocodile:
  I don't know
  He looks like the type who always gets whateeever he wants
  and that's /
  the Fox:
  just never good for anyone
They lead him to a tree
They tie him to the trunk
  The Fox:
  I am the Fox
  Says the Fox
  The Squirrel:
  I am the squirrel
```

Says the Squirrel

as they fill his pockets with honey as they fill his mouth with ants

(A beat) Lina: It is so easy! Emil: See, I knew you had potential Who would have thought that it could be so rewarding shooting a gun? Just like this, right into the mud, blah blah Remember when you gave me a kiss? Emil: When? Lina: You could do it again sometime Emil takes off his clothes. Underneath he wears shiny prince costume. Jewels falls from his pockets. He drags a chain of pearls from his mouth and puts it around Lina's neck PART 4 - LOST We have forests We have lakes We have mountaintops and valleys We have all kinds of animals We have creatures, monsters, trolls We have hidden places and famous ghosts We have snow, and rain and even darker days We have it all and it makes us wonder what's real Lina: I had this dream Emil: What dream? Lina: Oh - it's silly Emil: Tell Lina: In this dream, I was a woman And this woman said -Lina as the woman What am I? (Lina pretends to be an animal) Emil: Ok-

Lina:

So what am I?

```
Emil:
   You are aaaaaa ...
                 beaver
   Emil as the man
   Now - What am I?
(Emil pretends to be an animal)
   Lina:
   No, it's silly
   Emil:
   I don't think it's silly
   It's kind of fun
   Guess – what am I?
   Lina:
   Aaaaaa ...
                 hamster
   Emil:
   A hamster - Come on.
   Emil as the man
   What am I?
   Line
   I don't know!
   Emil:
   Guess!
   Line
   You are
   You are
   You are
                 – a bear
   Emil as the man
   Grrrr
   Emil:
   And now it's your turn
   Show me!
   What are you?
   Line
   I don't know
   Emil:
   Show me!
   Line
   I don't know!
   Look - it's a game!
   It's supposed to be fun – Show me!
```

Lina as the woman

```
(Lina tries but gives up)
   Emil:
   What's wrong with you?
   Nothing's wrong with me
   It's just -
   Emil:
   Come on
   Emil as the man
   - show me!
   Lina as the woman
   Lina:
   No-
   Bugger
   OK - Wait!
   Like this?
   Lina as the woman
   Emil:
   I love it
   No – I really – Really. That's lovely
   Come here
   (in a low voice) You are a squirrel – an alley cat – a tiny white mouse
(A beat)
The children are watching from the bridge
Let's cross it
says one
Let's stay behind
says the other
   Julian:
   I tried to sign up for online dating
   I thought there must be some horny women online
   There must be other compulsive liars who'd want to have an affair with me
   Someone that wouldn't get hurt
   Someone open to the terms
   We meet we fuck we keep it secret
   I was wrong
   I couldn't find anyone like that out there
   I ended up spending a lot of money fighting online with women that didn't
   want to meet
   I mean do they think I'm stupid?
   That I don't get it?
   I know they're paid to entertain me online
   To make me feel special
   To send me pictures with the hope that one day we will meet or fuck
   But the truth is that they are hired by some company to keep me on the website
   And since you pay for each email you send
```

It's not convenient for them to let you meet out in real life They're not people that you can actually spend time with or have fun with You get it? They meet liars with lies That's maybe fair They make their profit off our fucking sorrow They use people's problems to suck money out of our pockets Fuck anyway I felt so useless when I realized I got depressed because some woman I met online was probably lying to me I was so shocked to realize that she didn't find me incredibly attractive That she was sitting somewhere unknown getting paid to turn me on Fuck that's humiliating! I'm tired I can't be a good person I don't believe in therapy to change I don't believe in art anymore as sublimation I drove the car, the car drove me, in silence, it's electric and it drives in silence It stopped by the water, and there I saw – the feeling water, waiting, trying to push the pedal, trying to give gas I smelt shame I felt narcissistic shame

There I could finally meet it, there it was inside me – For an hour, I was by the

Kate:

You are lying

Julian: Yes

Kate:

You don't want to die

You've never even watched online porn

Julian:

No, I haven't

Kate:

It's just something you say to impress me You've never believed in in art as sublimation

Julian:

Yes, I did!

Kate:

- I know

You are just depressed because some asshole didn't want to put on your performance, that's all

I am depressed because I am losing my hair! That's all!

(A beat)

Lina (shouts):

No

I don't need a bed

No

I don't need sleep

Don't need a thing, just a back to push myself against

```
A resilient back
   The real diagnosis is to like me
(Long silence)
A campfire
Four children pretending to be safe
pretending to be what they want to be: a squirrel, a badger, a crocodile and a fox
Four animals
lighting an engangsgrill
barbequing a chocolate bar and a sandwich and a piece of chicken
   The Crocodile:
   Watch out – the chocolate is melting!
   I told you
   I told you we should have put it on last
   The Fox:
   Scoop it up!
   Scoop it up!
   It's just like poo – it's like soup – we could drink it
Four little animals lighting a fire
It's golden
It sparks
Shines and glistens in the dark far away
Far away from home
That's where they are
   The Squirrel:
   Are we really?
   The Crocodile:
   We are
   The Squirrel:
   Are we really like lost?
   The Fox:
   Lost in the woods
   The Crocodile:
   Not kind of lost but like
   -LOST
   The Fox:
   Totally
   The Crocodile:
   Like totally fucking lost
   The Fox:
   Like totally – t o t a l l y /
   The Crocodile:
   - fucking - /
   The Fox:
   Like we have to live on roots and moss and shit, right?
   The Crocodile:
   -\log t - Right!
```

(Silence)

```
The Squirrel:
   I have a can of beans here – if anybody fancies it
   The Fox:
   Does anybody have a can opener?
   The Squirrel:
   We could use a stone or something
   The Crocodile:
   Yeah – let's stone it
They stone the can of beans
   Julian:
   I thought about taking a lot of pills
   I thought about cutting open my veins, going out like a Roman, sitting in the
   bath and enjoy the end while reading my favorite book, but then I thought,
   shit, - we don't have a bath. We never had the money to replace our shower
   with a bathtub. She always complains about it. Says the kids should live in a
   house with the bath – and anyway – I can't even decide what is my favorite
   book. It all seems so staged, so thought-out
   I thought about hanging myself, but it's not so easy. Too many things can go
   wrong. Maybe the hook isn't strong enough, the rope could break, worst case,
   you risk hanging a long time before you actually die!
   It's like that - That's the terrible thing - like when you have the feeling that
   you don't even own your own words
   Not even your feelings
   They are – They are not even like /
   Emil:
   original?
   Julian:
   Lina:
   We know how you feel
   Julian:
   Yes-
   They feel even /
   Emil:
   - made up?
   Julian:
   Made up –
   the moment you say them - As you say them - As you speak
   Lina:
   Emil:
   Lina:
   I think it's psychological
   Julian:
   Damned sure it's psychological!
```

```
I get so frustrated sometimes
   Just so fucking FRUSTRATED -
   I just feel like screaming
   What if I can't function
   What if I'm like
                  Broken
   Like a piece of machinery, like – just
                  PUFF - and then - no more
   Just like scrap
   Lina:
   You are not broken
   You are not broken, Julian.
(Silence)
   How high was the river last time you were here?
   Hunter 2:
   Hunter 1:
   I don't think I've ever seen it run this high
(Silence)
   Hunter 1:
   This place is not exactly solskinnslia
   Hunter 2:
   Hunter 1:
   But that's where you find them
   Krokstavemne
   Where there is little sun, and rough terrain
   Up this scree, see?
   All along Is-skardet the woods are all crocked
   Almost no need to do anything but chopping a emne off the tree and then just
   carve the bark right off it
   You would be pretty silly if you went looking for krokstavemne at the sunny
   side of eide
   One needs to know these things, there is no point whittling the wood
   polishing it – if you have a emne that is as straight as an edge
   But who has time these days
   As soon as the snow melts, – it's calving, and planting, and there is wood to be
   chopped
   There is no end to it this time of year
   But it's nice
   it is
   working the wood
   when the weather is nice and the summer breezes blows across eide
   then this is the place to be, you know
   before you have to turn your hand to the firewood
   or fishing
   or both
(Silence)
```

```
Hunter 1:
   Who is there?
   Hunter 2:
   Hunter 1:
   I thought I heard something
   Some children. Laughing -
   Did you hear anything?
   Hunter 1:
(Silence)
   Hunter 1:
   Can you see that gorge over there, between the mountains?
   Hunter 2:
   What gorge?
   Hunter 1:
   There -
   When you see it from this direction, it looks like if someone has cracked the
   mountain right open, – there. That crack over there. Can you see it?
   Hunter 2:
   Oh yes
   Now I see it!
   Hunter 1:
   They say that one day that crack will just burst open. That it will open itself up
   into an abyss. No one knows when it will happen. It could be tomorrow - or in
   a hundred years from now.
(A beat)
   Julian
                                             Kate
   Lately -
                                             He has been saying that he wants to die
   I don't know
                                             − I'm fine with the dying I just hate
                                             all this talk
   It's like - I can't find my voice
                                             It's not that I want him dead
                                             It's just
   I wake up, and it's gone
                                             It's just
   I open my mouth - and it's not there
                                             I am not his art-project
   I can't find my voice and I don't own my own words
                                             He wants to wear me like a sweater
   Not really
   I mean in a way I do
                                             Sneak around in me
                                             Try to get below the line,
  but not really
                                             underneath.
  I don't really own them
   I mean, fuck – they are just words
   So I try to speak and I just –
```

No voice - damned it

I am under a spell

a spell in which my brain is

like a huge maze at some point

You've come inside the maze

the earths' crust -

You know

I like that word – crust

We live on these giant plates and they keep pushing against

each other - pushing and pushing and I am desperately looking for an exit we are afraid of global warming

but one day

one day

but I can't find it.

There are more and more alleys there are more and more walls

there are more

the tension will just be too great and more problems.

There are more and more meaningless actions meaningless relationships meaningless locations

meaningless dreams meaningless worries and they will just

one day in some part of this place

break away from each other

Just flip and crash down and that will be that

The children are standing at a clearing They are waiting for the sun to come out They are never coming home

The Squirrel:

I have the prettiest tail in the world!

The Fox:

I have the sharpest teeth!

The Crocodile: Come on everybody! This way - Over here!

The Badger Grrroooowl

PART 5 - THE DARKNESS

We have forests We have lakes We have mountaintops and valleys We have all kinds of animals We have it all and we know it's precious And all we can feel, is the darkness All we can see, is the darkness All we can think, is darkness

(A beat Julian alone on the stage)

Julian:

in the beginning was the word you did not hear me did not see me did not cover your eyes did not hear a word think a thought did not hear me breathing your breathing it is for you I stand in darkness for you I am night I am the blackness that surrounds me it's like the air in your lungs I pour gasoline over me can you hear the sound of it like water heavy water that swirls that leaps across the wall the dam that falls to the ground spreads itself out touches your feet you stand barefoot in it it folds around you you do not hear my thoughts not a word you do not know that which is going to happen a work of art that's what will happen we will make a work of art that is what you will do you are all there you are all invited you are all a part of my story you are my work of art your lives your fears your memories your thoughts your feelings the fucking that already goes on in your heads that which you detest the punches the caresses the way you can't stop thinking about your children your cat and the wind fills the hall it caresses our necks it is so cold a rough hand and even if it is there the air is still it is all a totally still as if the air that's there was constituted by our breath as if in this hall on this peninsula we are running out of it the air we breath it stinks soon it will reek of gasoline I have begged you to come you all know each other I know you all you have all become one word for me that's enough that you are here that you know why we know each other we sleep with one another we kill each other we make each other sick we love one another we hate we have had enough of one another and still we want more ... that is all a complete murky darkness ... you sit here like blind as you learn to see with your senses to read with your minds as your fears are being unlocked the singing in you and your heart breaks out into the open out of your narrow chests but you are caught here in this waiting in this silence in the silence of the other and the silencing of others ... as we avoid each other's gaze we are on an island of bliss we are the makers of Utopia that will arise from the truth that I speak we will die you and you and me and you and your child in your home and the

dog and the deer as the forest burns down as it all burns down as the oceans rise aflame you will be on this island in an ocean of flames you as the ice turns to heat you are the heart of my art the eye of the storm I have this gasoline and this matchstick with it I will draw your portraits ... you will burn for my art for our joint venture each and every one of you will become an artist and as one finally like one... you take leave of your personalities you will become pure colours you will become my colours you will become all ears you can hear every word I say

(he lights a match)

you rise as I burn for you I stand aflame before your eyes who of you will take his jacket off which one of you will take his jacket off and throw it over me which one of you will try to put out the fire ... as I run through this dark crowd like a fireball to put you all alight you and you and you and you and you ... while we all turn into language not flesh not blood not hair heart only words freedom will blow you wide open turn you into word-bodies language-bodies all languages spoken as one this peninsula is my Babylon and I am Atlantis... we are shadows shadows of words look deep inside you there is light you are all lit up like through a window you can spot your own inner selves can you read your own hearts what is written there in the dusk that which makes what's readable unreadable ... this night smells of gasoline hear how I sing

(Sings a children's song. The author suggests this one – see on YouTube: ()

Its night on the island
Julian stands aflame
The crowd is applauding
The Crocodile is asleep
the Squirrel rests all curled up in the arms of the Badger
he is dreaming of candy floss and little brown nuts
Only the Fox is awake

```
She has gone hunting
She does not care about the stars
She is not gazing into the fire
She is a turtle too big for her shell
She is just like her mother – a wolf devouring a deer
a princess shedding her skin
   Julian:
   I mean – There is a certain kind of framework that you are supposed to fit into
   Consensus paralyses action
   I mean – if the idea of what you cannot do is stronger than the idea about what
   you can do
   Emil:
   Like the sniper
   Julian:
   What about the sniper?
   Emil:
   When he hits
   I mean – there is the voice of reason and then the will to act and then – the
  These are the days of the sniper
   That's what I think
   It's all about what you do and what you say
   Cause and effect
   Cause and effect
   Julian:
   Like when the link is broken then – If what you say – does not mean anything
   Like -
                  There is no effect
   Lina:
   And the sniper?
   Emil:
   That's what I mean
   Julian:
   You have guns?
   Emil:
   Yes
   So – If the link is broken, then -
   Why have guns if you are not going to use them?
   Emil:
   Julian:
   So – it is the time of the sniper
   Just
                  BANG!
```

(Silence)

And get it over with

Who is there in the undergrowth It is a Squirrel crying in her sleep

The Squirrel:
I don't want to play anymore
I don't want to pretend anymore
You are all lying!

Kate is looking for something She has forgotten what it was and she cannot find it She is searching through the bread bin Where are you –

Kate:

my little Crocodile?

Where is your den

- my little Fox?

Come out! She cries

Stop hiding!

Come home

- and I'll play with you I'll build you a palace

I'll fill your purses with flagstones and

gold

I'll be the candy-bear You'll be the boogyman You'll be the astronaut

I'll be the sun

${\tt PART~6-THE~HUNT}$

We wonder if we are dreaming We wonder of the outside And all we can feel is its darkness And all we can see it is darkness And all we can think, it is darkness

> The Fox: This way

The Crocodile: This way

(Short pause)

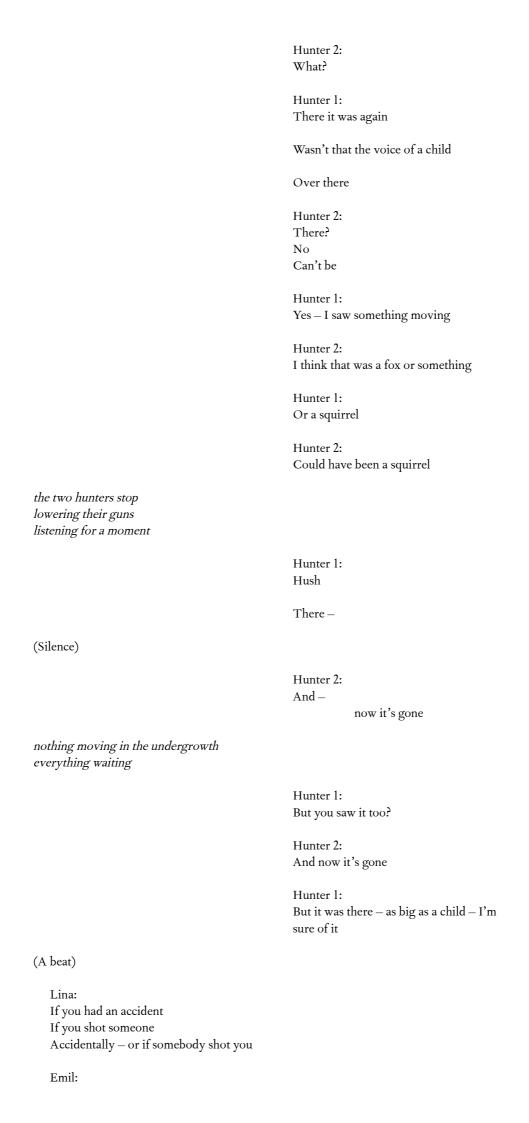
The Squirrel:

Do you think they still remember us?

The children are leaving the peninsula
They are entering the mainland
moving deeper into the interior – and as they do, they are leaving a trail behind them
a plastic bag
a candy wrap
a cap
the Badgers left shoe
The night is there
the marsh spreads out between the pine trees
pulling at their roots as the puddles grow darker

Hunter 1:

Hey – did you hear that?



Dead?
Lina: Yes
It's just. It's not as if you would be missing much. I mean, what would you miss? Your thoughts?
Emil: No I certainly wouldn't miss them much. You?
Lina: But still – I'm not going to shoot myself.
Emil: It's a possibility
Lina:
Emil: I've always considered it a possibility. Sort of a privilege even. That you can shoot yourself in the face if you wanted to Isn't that better? Consider it my gift to you.
You are welcome.
Lina: I didn't thank you.
(silence A beat)
The hunters wade through the wetlands Following the traces of tiny footprints
Hunter 2: That's what it's called
Hunter 1: What?
Hunter 2: Krokelva.
Hunter 1: Because it is crooked?
Hunter 2: No. Because of that guy that lived down there Kroken. He lived by the river. A long time ago.
Hunter 1:
Hunter 2: His hand was so deformed that it looked like a hook, all crocked. Like this (he shows him) That's what they say, anyways.
Hunter 1:

The old folks?

```
Yes. He never got himself a woman. Just lived there, down by the river alone.
   Getting by as best as he could with his crooked hand. People looked at him like
   an original, I guess.
   Hunter 1:
   These things happen
   Hunter 2:
   They do
   Hunter 2:
   What is it?
   Hunter 1:
   I'm not sure.
   Hunter 2:
   I think it's a fox. It's not a squirrel, not a hare. Too heavy
   Hunter 1:
   - it might be a fox
   Hunter 2:
   Husssjj
   Look-
   Hunter 1:
   Where
   Hunter 2:
   There
   Under the branches
   Hunter 1:
   It is really big. As big /
   Hunter 2:
   - as a six year-old.
   Hunter 1:
   I got it.
   Hunter 2:
   Wait
   Are you sure it's an animal?
   Hunter 1:
   I got it
   Hunter 2:
   Should we not - I think it's -
   Hunter 1:
The sound of a gunshot
(Long silence)
```

Kate:

What was that?

Julian

What was what?

Kate

It was as if fire touched my back.

Julian:

I felt nothing

This is not an island
It is a peninsula
It will never move
And then it does
there is a cracking noise
and then a silence

A cracking noise and then a movement – at the place where the peninsula is at its narrowest

A fox lies dead in the woods

It is cold

The children that pretend to be animals pretend no more

PART 7 - THE ISLAND

Julian

What's that sound?

It sounded like thunder Or an earthquake Or something

Kate

It's probably just the world coming to an end

Julian:

With my luck?

Kate:

Don't worry

Today is not the day

If you were a bird

You could see it

A peninsula tied to the mainland and then a crack

straight across eide

You would see the suburbs, and the lake and the kindergarten

You would see eide

And then the wood and the marshland and the little dead fox

At eide there is a trail of ants

and a tree

with a man tied to it and then suddenly a crack and you would see how the crack spins and moves chewing up the tree – the man – the trail of ants leaving the interior on one side and the peninsula on the other

Hunter 1:

There it was again!

Let's go home says the boy I want my mother Says the girl I am scared

As if something shifted underneath our feet

Opening up and getting ever wider Turning the peninsula into an island

Hunter 1:

How close was it, do you think?

Hunter 2: Not close

At least on the other side of the marsh

The Squirrel: Look at the trees!

Says the Squirrel

The Squirrel: Look at the trees! Look at the trees!

Look at the Fox It's not moving

The Crocodile:

I don't want to look at the Fox

The Squirrel:

Will she ever move again?

The Crocodile:

Look at the water in my cup!

It's shaking!

The Squirrel:

It is!

The Crocodile: How cool is that!

Look at the trees Look at the Fox

Look at the trees - says the Squirrel as the Fox lies outstretched on his back

The Crocodile:

Give her the battleax

The Squirrel:

She never wanted the battleax

The Crocodile:

Give it to her!

The Squirrel:

It was always you who wanted that battleax I don't want to have anything to do with it

As the trees shake as the leave tumble over them as they jump and shout between twigs and branches

The Crocodile:

The Fox should have it!

As the world rips open – as Julian stares down in the abyss: Bye bye children Bye bye hunters Bye bye mainland Julian: I don't want to die! You are not going to die! Hunter 1: There it goes again? Julian: The ground's shaking! Emil: What was it? The Squirrels looks at the Badger who looks at the Crocodile The Squirrel: The ground's shaking! The Crocodile: My belly's shaking! The Squirrel: My tail is shaking! The Squirrel: I don't like this anymore Emil: We better call somebody Lina: Who do we call? and rocks starts rolling down the slopes and the rumbling grows higher and the river starts to spill its water onto the marshes and the lake rips open like a ripe fruit Pouring its sweet water into the ocean as the hunters picks up their guns in that dark interior far away from danger As the rivers ripple – as the Badger clings to the Crocodile As the Squirrel clings to the Badger And the Crocodile keeps slamming its tail in the mud shouting to see if her voice is bigger than the rumble As the peninsula starts tearing itself away from the mainland as if it had a will of its own Really Kate - I don't want to die! Kate: Nobody is dying This is not the end. It can't be - whatever end you're looking for... it's not going to happen while we're here on this island

Lina: Emil – could you just hold me for a second

Emil:
What?
What did you say?
I cannot hear you for all that noise!

Julian:

We should jump, all together. Before it's too late.

Kate:

 $How\ strange-I\ feel\ like\ this\ is\ all\ a\ metaphor$

Maybe it's all just a metaphor

I don't get it

I don't get it Julian

You've always been good with metaphors

I mean – I thought – Even if the world ends, this place would like

stay the same.

Lina:

Somebody must do something!

Julian

I think I'm going to jump.

Kate:

But you can't.

Emil:

He'll never do it. He'll never jump.

Julian

Well, you're wrong. I'm going to jump.

Kate:

Julian!

Emil:

You can't stop a man from killing himself.

Lina:

What if you don't die?

If you just keep falling forever?

Emil:

Once, I tried bungee jumping. Falling was the worst part.

Julian:

This is a nightmare!

(Silence)

There it is

The peninsula

Floating like on its own like a giant scull – It tips ever so slowly in the water

swaying then stabilizing

Swaying

then stabilizing

Drifting further and further from the mainland

Away from the woods

Away from the children – four little animals – a Fox

Insects building nets in its pointed ears

Lina:

I always thought of this as an island anyway

Kate: This place is where I grew up.
Julian: This place is what we chose for our children
Kate: We have to find them
Emil: Well, we still have the ferry.
Lina: The gas station is still here
Kate: What if they are there On the other side
Julian, Emil and Lina: –
Kate: The children!
Julian:
– Don't be stupid They are just hiding somewhere
Kate:
When we moved to this place, we thought this was the exit.
Julian: When we moved to this place, I didn't want to move.
Emil: At this point, all we need to do is to relax
Julian: Whatever we decide to do, it's going to be ok –
Julian: Whatever we decide to do, it's no longer our decision.
Emil: Whatever we decide to do, we need to transform.
Kate: Whatever we decide to do, we need to take care of what we have.
Julian: It's going to get better
Lina: —
Julian: It always gets better

```
Lina:
   It's like -
   All I do
   All I think
   It's just -
   I know-
   it comes from society, from our parents -
   It creates - like a hole and then -
   Julian:
   I know
   Lina:
   We fight
   aaall the time - to be -
   We fight
(a pause)
   Lina:
   It's the snails
   It's the garbage
   We can't get rid of it
   It's everywhere
   I think -
   I mean – I don't mind the rain.
   I am just worried about the snails
   The slugs
   Julian:
   I know
   This system makes profit off our fucking
   sorrow
   I am just worried about the garden
   About all the stuff
   My mother died
   It's important – how we live
(Silence)
   Julian:
   Did you hear?
   This man went to the kindergarten
   to pick up his grandchild and discovers that it was the wrong
   kid
   The child - The kid was three
   I mean – what a shock
   Like picking up the wrong child
   How can you do that?
   Kate:
   You are lying
   Julian:
   Yes
```

Kate: You never slept with the neighbor
Julian: No
Kate: You are lying
Julian: Yes
Kate: You slept with her
Julian: No
Kate: You live in denial.
Julian: You are in denial
Kate: You feel like a coward
Julian: You are in denial about how the world perceives you.
Kate: And how is that? How does the world perceive me?
Julian: Oh – I am this wonderful person I recycle my garbage
I want to save the world
Who are you going to save now!? Who!? This planet is already a big dump A dump full of plastic And we, we are dancing right on top of it!
Deep in the marsh Two hunters are burying a child
Hunter 1: Yes
Hunter 2: Yes
Deep in the marsh The birds are chirping: Who is a bat, is a bird, is a beaver?
(A beat)
Lina: Before I was careful. I recycled every little item. If I wasn't sure I just put it to the side until later. I started thinking about it like raw material. Paper, plastic and all that. Hazardous waste, electronics, wood,

aluminum

Now it seems endless.

Little by little I've just lost my patience. The emotions got me. First it was just a little carelessness. A framed photograph that I just couldn't deal with dismantling it in order for the paper to go with paper, glass with glass, aluminum with aluminum, wood with wood.

I just threw it in a garbage bag and as soon as I did that – the entire system was flawed

So, in the end – that's what we all do

We just stuff it all in garbage bags and drag it to the front lawn and there they just stand

hundreds

thousands of black garbage bags.

No one no longer has any idea of what *is* what: photo albums with kitchen appliances and stereos and books and pamphlets from every organization – clothes

heaps of winter coats

one for each winter, and all the tiny fibers in all the other coats, all the filling

filling the garbage cans

all this winter

heaped up in the front yards

Five thousands pairs of shoes.

in the roundabouts

Smelly old crusty leather piles

In the school yards

dragging with them some filth from some long gone

It nauseates me.

Sometimes I just wish it would all explode, all of it, just so that we don't have to worry about it anymore.

Lina keeps roaming through the fur coats

The shoes

The filth

A piece of art

A piece of shit

Lina (shouts):

I hate things!

Why can't they just self-terminate!

Why can't they just explode!

(Silence)

The children that pretend to be animals pretend no more

It is cold

Snow's falling

A child lies covered with earth

Hunter 1 and 2

_

The hunters do what they know how to do

They hunt

Hunter 2:

_

I was thinking about doing some fishing. Putting out some nets.

Hunter 2:

Nets here?

Yes. Hunter 2: But that's illegal, isn't it? Hunter 1: Maybe Hunter 2: And you are going to do it anyway Hunter 1: It's only for the good Thinning it out Hunter 2: Thinning it out? The fish are too small. And there's too many of them. So, I am thinning it out Hunter 2: In the river? Hunter 1: Yes Hunter 2: You are thinning the river because there are too many small fish in the pond? Wait - don't answer Hunter 1: It was me and my cousin. We were about to jump, but then we heard somebody, long steps across the heather and then we lost our courage. We just turned around and ran away. Hunter 2: Where did you run too? Hunter 1:

Hunter 1:

Up. Up along the creek. Into the ravine and through the thickets. Up to the waterfall. It's hard work, slow all the way to the top.

Around it, the ground was covered with Geitrams, by the pond, underneath the waterfall. And no sign of marshland. The waterfall is all hidden behind the thicket, it closes in on it, around the pond.

There were some other children there, but when I turned around I could not see any.

Hunter 2:

What other children?

In the waterfall, in the pond. Behind the foxgloves. I cannot see them. Not in the waterfall, not in the pond. But I hear them saying things. Talking.

They say – your family has left you.

Your family has left you. Your girlfriend has left you. You are alone. They keep on repeating it. You are alone, you have nobody.

Far away.

Up the hill, I crawl through the ferns, all along the edge of the waterfall. Its steep up there. The earth is so brittle where the fawns grow, I keep on slipping. Slipping. Slipping. But I get up, I get myself up.

Then it opens up.

The landscape.

```
Hunter 2:
Yes. Up by the lake -
Hunter 1:
Yes.
Hunter 2 (continues):
- at Isskardet. That icy cleft up there. You walk it and then onwards, as far as you want to
go.
Hunter 1 or Hunter 2 or both:
I am up by the water facing it, facing the cleft – and when I turn around, I can see vågen.
The bay is clear and frail like -
And as they stand there
The snow continues to fall
And as they stand there
It covers the ground
the flowerbeds and garbage cans
soaking the trees lining the roundabout
soaking the paths leading into the cracks – into the place where the island became an island
                             PART 9 - THE ISLAND
This is the island
This is our home
This is where we drive our car
This is where we ride our horses
This is where the ferry anchors up
Here there was no need for a bridge. Here we were connected, were safe.
This place is a part of the world.
This is how she used to think of it.
 Kate parks the Qasqai
Lina is pacing the floors
What is it Lina?
   Lina:
   I can not bear it anymore
   It's everywhere
   It's like acid – corrosion
What is it -
   the smell /
   - like a cat breaking down inside me
   a porcupine
   a badger
   melting into me
   a seagull, a lumpfish,
   an old rat
   To think how she carried this ugly old mug with her, from apartment to
   apartment, -
   No
She says
   No
```

She is leaving the basement

She is in the livingroom She is holding the jug She has these candlesticks. She has this Danish statue of white children grimacing. She has these hand-made coasters. She has this African quilt. this silk. this linen. these napkin-rings. these silver spoons. these silver forks. these silver knives. This painting of a quiet man this chair and this chair and this chair – and she starts to shoot at random first just randomly at her stuff at her paintings her china her silverware her pots and pans all the leftovers her mother's jug the window in her living room the windows in her bedroom one, two, three, four Drop the gun Lina Drop the gun! She goes out She is heading for higher ground Let go of the gun! She lets go of the gun She is not thinking about slugs (Long silence A beat) Kate: Did you hear that? Lina: What? Kate: Nothing The sound of nothing So quiet Lina: Kate: Is that your gun? Lina:

```
Kate:
   Do you have more?
   Lina:
   More guns?
   What do you want to shoot at?
   Kate:
   I don't know
   Is it important?
   At road signs maybe
   Or the garden center
   They have a sale on
   Lina:
   I was thinking - when I'm done shooting at the mug - that I want to just shoot
   at the bullet, shoot it once and when it splits open I shoot at the fragments and
   then again, you see, until there is just powder and bang.
   Kate:
   You know there is a part of our brain, from back in evolution, that is activated
   with the sound of something crunching ... it makes us hungry ... like when
   they design chips, they study the crunch ... the better it crunches, the harder it
   is to stop eating. It's like a biological click in your brain that the crunch
   activates ... that's why it's so hard to stop eating chips once you have started
   ...
   Lina:
   Kate:
   Smell the grass
   So fresh
   Isn't it lovely?
   It's so lovely here, this time of year - on this peninsula
   Kate and Lina:
(A beat)
   The Squirrel:
   I am hungry
   The Crocodile:
   We'll eat soon
   The Squirrel:
   How soon?
   The Crocodile:
   We'll find some berries
   Or mushrooms
   Or a house
   The Squirrel:
   I hate mushrooms
   The Crocodile:
```

Let's make a snowman!

The Squirrel: Look! Over there – a path!

The badger and the Squirrel:

_

The Squirrel: Let's take it!

The Crocodile:

What if it takes us all the way into town

The Squirrel:

I have a hundred dollar bill

The Crocodile:

We could get a hot dog, or a pizza,

The Squirrel: Or a steak I want a big, fat bloody steak

The Badger that is a boy starts humming The Squirrel is right behind him The Crocodile is humming to

The Crocodile:

Here comes the boogyman

Says the crocodile

The Squirrel:

Here comes the hammerfish

Says the Squirrel

EPILOGUE

(As the characters leaves the stage)

They own the statue of the little girl with the matchsticks.

They own all these Danish statues of white children grimacing.

They own these candlesticks.

They own these hand-made coasters.

They own this African quilt.

They own this silk.

They own this linen.

They own these napkin-rings.

They own this silver.

They own these silver spoons.

They own these silver forks.

They own these silver knives.

They own this painting of dancing women.

They own this painting of a quiet man.

They own this painting of forms and colors.

They own this Turkish rug.

They own this old porcelain.

They own this stereo.

They own these speakers.

They own this TV.

They own this sofa table.

They own this chair. They own this chair as well. And this chair. And this chair.

(The room is empty)

The Island

A collaborative play – twin version with Darkness the Enemy Inside by Kristin Eìriksdottìr, Gianluca Iumiento, Tale Næss, Sigbjørn Skåden and Albert Ostermeier

Dramaturg/headwriter/translator Tale Næss.

Characters:

Julian

Kate

Emil

Lina

Lina

Hunter 1

Hunter 2

and four children pretending to be animals

All the actors can be on stage all the time.

The scenes and actions run parallel more often than not. Sometimes they overlap.

The text in italics can be read as stage directions.

They could also, or as well – be shared between the performers, read by one actor, or shared between the performers representing the children.

The text in brackets is not be read.

PROLOGUE

The characters enter the stage.

The children are watching from afar.

Each of them locked up in a room, in a cupboard, in a grown person's life.

They own the statue of the little girl with the matchsticks.

They own all these Danish statues of white children grimacing.

They own these candlesticks.

They own these hand-made coasters.

They own this African quilt.

They own this silk.

They own this linen.

They own these napkin-rings.

They own this silver.

They own these silver spoons.

They own these silver forks.

They own these silver knives.

They own this painting of dancing women.

They own this painting of a quiet man.

They own this painting of forms and colors.

They own this Turkish rug.

They own this old porcelain.

They own this stereo.
They own these speakers.
They own this TV.
They own this sofa table.
They own this chair.
They own this chair as well.
And this chair.
And this chair.

(The room is empty)

PART 1 - IN THE BEGINNING

Kate:

A friend of mine just came back from Peru

He'd been travelling. Ha had taken part in a ritual while he was down there It included drinking this tea. This narcotic tea, extracted from this cacti, and he said that everything just opened up, transforming itself into pure energy.

He touched the stones on the ground, and they were warm

He put his hand in the creek running by, and it was alive

And all of this, the stones, the creek, the teacup, his body was surrounded by this energetic field. A green, glowing field holding everything up, keeping everything together...

I can't stop thinking about it.

It's there when I get up, when I shower, when I go to the gym. When I prepare for a meeting, drive the children to school

at work

at the drawing board when I go through the allocations

look at the plans for a new building

the children are filling the space with objects

It's all there:

with tables and table clothes

foundations, lintels, cornerstones

plates and cutlery bicycles and books

and I see it

How it's all connected and all hold together by this green, glowing field of energy

with steps and staircases

cities

Servietts and serviett rings

High rises, office blocks — electrically loaded intertwined like the cells in our bodies and then — $\,$

the thought of it no longer being there

that one day, it will be gone

the link broken

how it all would start to collapse – collapse and start drifting apart

the walls from the foundation

the roof from its beams

buildings from the city

cities torn away from the ground

even the molecules in the water, the cells in our bodies – mountains free

floating there in an empty space all of a sudden filled with snow, with grit, with stones and pine forests - thinning out Thinning out and moving in all kinds of directions at the same time The world left open to a free-falling chaos, - and I have to pinch myself and I try to focus on the sofa on the kids - running, playing laughing. how they smell when they sleep and I want to hold on to them tie them to my chest and never let go (silence) the Fox: Look at this painting! the Squirrel: Look at this lamp! the crocodile: Look at this tablecloth! the Squirrel: And this one! the crocodile: And this one! And this one! (The badger picks up a battle axe) the crocodile: It's mine! the Squirrel: It's mine! the Fox: Leave her alone! (The badger lifts the axe. Swings it) the Fox: She had it first! the crocodile: I had it first! the Squirrel: Watch out or she'll chop your heads off (Laughter) Julian: I had a dream Kate: A dream? I saw this rock that looked like a giant head. A face

```
floating like - And the sun was setting
   Kate:
   That's beautiful
   I wouldn't call it beautiful
   It was more
   It was like floating, tipping ever so slowly – up and down in the water
   A gigantic face, tipping in the water, as the sun sets
   I call that beautiful
(Silence)
   Julian:
   We have everything we need, don't we?
   We do - don't we?
   Kate:
   Yes, it's so lovely
   here on this island - this time of year
   Julian:
   It's not an island
   Kate:
   Julian:
   It's not an island – it's a peninsula.
   You keep calling it an island – but it is a peninsula. That's where we live
   I don't like the way you're looking at me right now.
   Kate:
   How am I looking at you?
   Julian:
   Like it's my fault.
   Like I've done something wrong.
(Lina says:)
   They gritted their teeth and celebrated Christmas
   together
   They only did it for us
   They only did it because of us
   Because we were their children
   She got us and the house and all the stuff but he got nothing at all.
   He left and she stayed and she never threw anything out.
   She just packed the drawers without even looking through them,
   just bagged them and taped them. There was just this old random mess.
   To think how she carried this ugly old mug with her, from apartment to
   apartment, since early in the nineties
   Julian:
   It's going to get better.
   Lina:
```

	_
	So, I saw this badger.
	Julian: Where?
	Lina: In the garden.
	Julian:: Shit. You know, when they bite, they don't stop until they feel the bones.
	Lina: Yeah. Until it crunches. It's so nasty.
	Julian: Maybe we were all badgers once.
	Lina: My husband is one for sure.
(Li	ina does a funny badger face)
	Julian: That's right. That's how he looks! Definitely a badger!
	Julian: Do you think it's gone?
	Lina: What? The badger?
	Julian: Do you think It's gone?
	Lina: What? The badger?
	Julian: Yes, the badger.
	Lina: I think it is. I guess it was migrating from the forest to the water or something like that. I'm not an expert. Ah $-$ it's lovely on this island this time of year Don't you just love the flowers and $-$
	Julian: It's not an island
	Lina: Excuse me –
	Julian: It is not an island
	Don't say that
	Lina: Say what?
	Julian: That it's an island It's a peninsula

It's inaccurate An island is inaccurate An island have water It's surrounded by water This is not an island Lina: Whatever Julian: You all call it an island, but it's not – it's a peninsula, we live in a peninsula, a peninsula that's where we live so why does everybody go on calling it an island! (A beat) Julian: It was not enough A house, a garden, out of the center, close to the water, perfect for kids We came in the marked, such a luck, we were relieved My wife - She works less, I work more, she wants more, she wants more of me We went to the mountains, the snow went away ... it's not global warming. It's spring, we were too late (The children are watching him) the Squirrel: Who's there? Says the Squirrel the Fox: Who's there? Says the Fox the crocodile: That's my father Says the Crocodile Julian: We had a second child The dream house the Squirrel: He's funny Julian: We got the children into kinder garden this suuupre Steiner place – deep in the woods we all loved it, but it wasn't very practical the Fox:

He's strange

the crocodile: He's mental

And then it was all this with the car What to do with the car the Squirrel: I don't know The electric car The crocodile: He is an hyper carnivore apex predator. So I got this Quasqai It's big. It's safe. It's good for the kids. It drives on gasoline, well hell! But I just could not get rid of the other one, the electric one - So now I have two. Two cars. (Silence) Kate: You are lying Julian: Am I? Kate: Yes Julian: You are right Kate: So why did you say it then? Julian: For you my dear For you A fox is hiding under the bed A badger lurks underneath the kitchen table the Squirrel: Where are you going? the Fox: He's going nowhere The badger is packing a battle-axe a comb a flashlight the crocodile: It looks like his going somewhere Julian: I'm doing it for you, the Squirrel: If she's going, then I want to go! Julian: It's true. the Fox:

Let's all go!

PART 2 - THE HUNTERS

We have water We have water all around us We have so much water it feels like an island An island so huge we almost forget

We have seasons, beautiful and long with colors and leaves and storms We have it all We have it all We have it all

the Squirrel: I have a tale!

the Fox:
I have a hoof!

the crocodile: I have fangs!

the Fox: I have the sharpest teeth!

the crocodile: *I* have the sharpest teeth, the biggest grin, superpowers, handicaps, life-skills, love, a jar filled with sprogs, with jellyfish, heartache

the Fox: We have a battle axe!

the crocodile:
Off with their heads!

the Badger Grrrrroooaawllllle

The children are hiding in the cupboards
In the basements
In the sewers
In the innards of a roundabout
They are bumping into furniture
Into shelfs and wardrobe-doors

the crocodile: Look at me now! Says the Crocodile

the Squirrel: Look at me now!

Says the Squirrel

the crocodile:

Listen to the sounds I make

the Squirrel:

Who is to be the bee?

The Fox:

Who is to be the beaver?

the Badger: Hzzzakkkettettetthzzz

They are sitting under the living room table, tearing a map to shreds

the crocodile: Who's in?

the Squirrel: So we are going?

the Fox:

I'm bringing a bikini!

The badger is packing a piece of barbeque chicken Some antiseptics He says:

> the Badger: Hzzzakkkettettetthzzz

This is an island so huge you could even get lost
This is an island so huge we almost forget – its forests and lakes
valleys and mountaintops
beaches and farms
all drowning in the darkness of the woods
littered with rabbit-holes
with fox-holes
dens and hives

two hunters by a creek waiting for their coffee to boil

Hunter 1:

Strange. It's a place, out there – where the waves break.

Hunter 2:

Ja, that's the Marbakke.

Hunter 1:

Marbakken.

Hunter 2:

Where it suddenly gets deep.

Hunter 1:

I see.

(Silence)

Hunter 1:

It's the sun. And the wind, - like now - like a head in the waves. A daudinghode. Where the waves break. It appears when the wind turns and then - 1've seen it. It breaks the surface - a dead man's head.

Hunter 2:

Can't say I have. Seen it, sitting here, seeing the sun go down - I've been here so many times.

Hunter 1:

It's the wind, when it turns. I was a child the first time I saw it. Up by Krokelva. Its high ground up there. It's easy to see it from up high, but you can see it here too.

```
Hunter 2:
   I've never heard anybody else mention anything like that – that there is a
   daudinghode in Vågen.
   Hunter 1:
   They all know it, and nobody talks about it.
(Short silence)
   Hunter 2:
   That guy, Kroken. Wasn't he still around when you were a child?
   Hunter 1:
   Was he? I don't know. I can't remember.
   He must still have been around when you were that age.
   No. Not in this area. Not as far as I remember.
   Hunter 2:
   It was a shooting accident wasn't it? That deformed his hand?
   Hunter 1:
   No, he was born that way
(Silence
Lina looks at Emil)
   Emil:
   Come shooting with me
   Lina:
   Shooting?
   At what? What do you want to shoot at?
   Emil:
   Just at anything at all. We could shoot at some seagulls or at some critters or at
   this mug your mother left you that you hate so, so much
   or just at the sky ...
   Lina:
   No thank you. I don't even know you!
   Do you have a gun?
   Emil:
   I have plenty of guns, we could leave right now and I could let you try all sorts
   of guns, a shotgun, a handgun, a rifle. I even have a machine gun.
   Lina:
   And where could we fire all these guns?
```

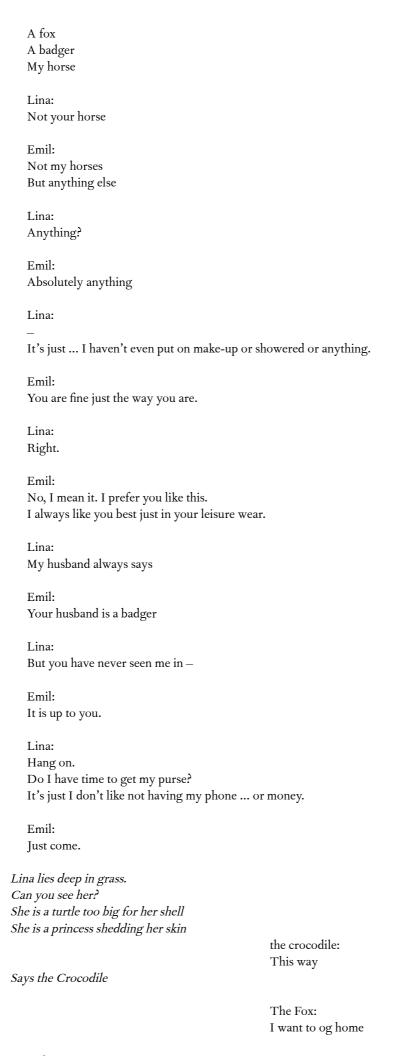
Emil: At my place

You can sleep at my place We could drink some more

You could shoot at my stuff

At my paintings My china My silverware My pots and pans

We could just go on a shooting spree



PART 3 - ON THE RUN

The wood is green and deep and endless there – where four animals are making their way through the thickets Who is there in the water? Who is there resting in the woods?

> The Squirrel: We shouldn't be here

The Badger, The Fox and the Crocodile:

—

The Squirrel:
We are not allowed
You know it
We should not cross that bridge
We should not swim that river

The Fox: A puddle!

The crocodile: Let's cross it

The Fox: Let's jump it! Let's splash around

The Squirrel: I want to go home

The crocodile:

Here comes the boogieman

Says the crocodile

The Fox:

Here comes the hammerfish!

Says the Fox

Emil:

Have you ever shot a gun before?

Lina:

No, never.

Have you ever shot anyone?

Emil: Many.

Lina:

Who then died?

Emil:

I'm very precise.

Lina

Always in self-defense?

Emil:

What do you think?

Yes, maybe just start with this one. Look, now it's loaded, here, just aim, and pull the trigger. See. Lina: Wow, it's heavy. Is it still loaded? Emil: Yes, just go crazy. Shoot. (Lina goes crazy. She shoots at everything A beat) The children are crossing the creek They are never coming home By a roadside a man stands bent over a flat tire cursing: Bugger Bugger Bugger, ass, puke, shit, bugger! Bugger me! As he continues to curse Blasted Cunt! Cunt-face! Ass! Cunt-ass Damn, damned, bugger, ass-bugger, motherfucker, fuck! Fuck, fuck, fuck As he calms down. As he is saying: I wish I was a child again I wish I was a child I wish I was a fireman I wish I was a goldfish swimming in my goldfish-bowl Saying: Do you have any tranquilizers? Saying: Show me your bags Show me your teeth Show me your hopes and dreams Show me your secret selves Show me the way home Tell me my name Tell me my name Tell me my name The children watch him He is crying The Squirrel: What's wrong with him? Says the Squirrel the crocodile: He wants a new name Says the crocodile

The Fox:

What name shall we give him?

```
The Squirrel:
  Maybe he already has a name
   The Fox:
   Maybe somebody has taken his name away from him
   The crocodile:
   He wants a new name, stupid
  The Squirrel (to the secretary of state):
   Don't you like your name?
   The Fox:
   Do we think he deserves one?
   The Squirrel:
   Everyone should have a name
   The Fox:
   What kind of name do you want?
   The Squirrel:
  Like a human name?
   Or /
  The Fox:
   - like our names?
   The Squirrel:
   I have a name for him!
   The crocodile:
   I don't know
   He looks like the type who always gets whateeever he wants
   and that's /
   the Fox:
   just never good for anyone
They lead him to a tree
They tie him to the trunk
   The Fox:
   I am the Fox
Says the fox
   The Squirrel:
   I am the squirrel
Says the Squirrel
as they fill his pockets with honey
as they fill his mouth with ants
(A beat)
   Lina:
   It is so easy!
   See, I knew you had potential.
   Lina:
```

Who would have thought that it could be so rewarding shooting a gun? Just like this, right into the mud, blah blah. Remember when you gave me a kiss? Emil: When? Lina: You could do it again sometime Emil takes off his clothes. Underneath he wears shiny prince costume. Jewels falls from his pockets. He drags a chain of pearls from his mouth and puts it around Lina's neck. PART 4 - LOST We have forests We have lakes We have mountaintops and valleys We have all kinds of animals We have creatures, monsters, trolls We have hidden places and famous ghosts We have snow, and rain and even darker days We have it all and it makes us wonder what's real Lina: I had this dream Emil: What dream? Lina: Oh-it's silly Emil: Tell Lina: In this dream, I was a woman And this woman said -Lina as the woman: What am I? (Lina pretends to be an animal) Emil: Ok-Lina: So what am I? Emil: You are aaaaaa ... beaver Emil as the man: Now - What am I?

(Emil pretends to be an animal)

Lina:

```
No, it's silly
  Emil:
  I don't think it's silly
  It's kind of fun
  Guess – what am I?
  Lina:
  Aaaaaa ...
                 hamster
  Emil:
  A hamster – Come on.
  Emil as the man:
  What am I?
  Line
  I don't know!
  Emil:
  Guess!
  Line
  You are
  You are
  You are
                 – a bear.
  Emil as the man:
  Grrrr
  Emil:
  And now it's your turn
  Show me!
  What are you?
  Line
  I don't know
  Emil:
  Show me!
  Line
  I don't know!
  Emil:
  Look-it's a game!
  It's supposed to be fun – Show me!
  Lina as the woman:
(Lina tries but gives up)
  Emil:
  What's wrong with you?
  Nothing's wrong with me
```

It's just -

```
Emil:
   Come on
   Emil as the man:
   - show me!
   Lina as the woman:
   Lina:
   No-
   Bugger
   OK – Wait!
   Like this?
   Lina as the woman:
   Emil:
   I love it
   No – I really – Really. That's lovely
   Come here
   (in a low voice) You are a squirrel – an alley cat – a tiny white mouse
The children are watching from the bridge
Let's cross it
says one
Let's stay behind
says the other
   Julian:
   I tried to sign up for online dating
   I thought there must be some horny women online
   There must be other compulsive liars who'd want to have an affair with me
   Someone that wouldn't get hurt
   Someone open to the terms
   We meet we fuck we keep it secret
   I was wrong
   I couldn't find anyone like that out there
   I ended up spending a lot of money fighting online with women that didn't
   want to meet
   I mean do they think I'm stupid?
   That I don't get it?
   I know they're paid to entertain me online
   To make me feel special
   To send me pictures with the hope that one day we will meet or fuck
   But the truth is that they are hired by some company to keep me on the website
   chatting
   And since you pay for each email you send
   It's not convenient for them to let you meet out in real life
   They're not people that you can actually spend time with or have fun with
   You get it?
   They meet liars with lies
   That's maybe fair
   They make their profit off our fucking sorrow
   They use people's problems to suck money out of our pockets
   Fuck anyway
   I felt so useless when I realized I got depressed because some woman I met
   online
   was probably lying to me
```

I was so shocked to realize that she didn't find me incredibly attractive That she was sitting somewhere unknown getting paid to turn me on Fuck that's humiliating! I'm tired I can't be a good person I don't believe in therapy to change I don't believe in art anymore as sublimation I drove the car, the car drove me, in silence, it's electric and it drives in silence It stopped by the water, and there I saw – the feeling water, waiting, trying to push the pedal, trying to give gas I smelt shame

There I could finally meet it, there it was inside me - For an hour, I was by the

I felt narcissistic shame

Kate:

You are lying

Julian: Yes

Kate:

You don't want to die

You've never even watched online porn

Julian:

No, I haven't

Kate: Kate:

You are lying

Julian: Yes

Kate:

You don't want to die

You've never even watched online porn

Julian:

No, I haven't

Kate:

It's just something you say to impress me You've never believed in in art as sublimation

Julian:

Yes, I did!

Kate:

I know

You are just depressed because some asshole didn't want to put on your performance, that's all

Julian:

I am depressed because I am losing my hair! That's all!

Lina (shouts):

No.

I don't need a bed.

No.

I don't need sleep.

No.

Don't need a thing, just a back to push myself against. A resilient back. The real diagnosis is to like me.

(Long silence)

A campfire
Four children pretending to be safe
pretending to be what they want to be: a squirrel, a badger, a crocodile and a fox
Four animals
lighting an engangsgrill
barbequing a chocolate bar and a sandwich and a piece of chicken

the crocodile:
Watch out – the chocolate is melting!
I told you
I told you we should have put it on last

the Fox:
Scoop it up!
Scoop it up!
It's just like poo – it's like soup – we could drink it

Four little animals lighting a fire It's golden It sparks Shines and glistens in the dark far away Far away from home That's where they are

the Squirrel:
Are we really?

the crocodile: We are

the Squirrel:

Are we really like lost?

the Fox:

Lost in the woods

the crocodile:

Not kind of lost but like

-LOST

the Fox: Totally

the crocodile:

Like totally fucking lost

the Fox:

Like totally – t o t a l l y /

the crocodile:
- fucking -/

the Fox:

Like we have to live on roots and moss and shit, right?

```
-\log t - Right!
(Silence)
                                                  the Squirrel:
                                                  I have a can of beans, if anybody fancies
                                                  the Fox:
                                                  Does anybody have a can opener?
                                                  the Squirrel:
                                                  We could use a stone or something
                                                  the crocodile:
                                                  Yeah - let's stone it
They stone the can of beans
   Hunter 1:
   What was that?
   Hunter 2:
   Hunter 1:
   I thought I heard something
   Some children. Laughing -
   Did you hear anything?
   Hunter 1:
(Silence - they listen)
   Hunter 1:
   I thought I heard something
   Some children. Laughing -
   Did you hear anything?
   Hunter 1:
(silence)
   Julian:
   I thought about taking a lot of pills.
   I thought about cutting open my veins, going out like a Roman, sitting in the
   bath and enjoy the end while reading my favorite book, but then I thought,
   shit, - we don't have a bath. We never had the money to replace our shower
   with a bathtub. She always complains about it. Says the kids should live in a
   house with the bath – and anyway – I can't even decide what is my favorite
   book. It all seems so staged, so thought-out.
   I thought about hanging myself, but it's not so easy. Too many things can go
   wrong. Maybe the hook isn't strong enough, the rope could break, worst case,
   you risk hanging a long time before you actually die!
   It's like that - That's the terrible thing - like when you have the feeling that
   you don't even own your own words
   Not even your feelings
   They are - They are not even like /
   Emil:
   original?
```

the crocodile:

```
Julian:
Lina:
We know how you feel
Julian:
They feel even /
Emil:
- made up?
Julian:
Made up –
the moment you say them - As you say them - As you speak
Lina:
Emil:
Lina:
I think it's psychological
Julian:
Damned sure it's psychological!
I get so frustrated sometimes
Just so fucking FRUSTRATED –
I just feel like screaming
What if I can't function
What if I'm like
               Broken
Like a piece of machinery, like - just
               PUFF - and then - no more
Just like scrap
Lina:
You are not broken
You are not broken, Julian.
Julian:
I mean - There is a certain kind of framework that you are supposed to fit into
Consensus paralyses action
I mean – if the idea of what you cannot do is stronger than the idea about what
you can do
Emil:
Like the sniper
Lina:
What about the sniper?
Emil:
I mean – there is the voice of reason and then the will to act and then –
```

the sniper -

and what you say Cause and effect Cause and effect Julian: Like when the link is broken then - If what you say - does not mean anything Like -There is no effect Lina: And the sniper? Julian: That's what I mean So – If the link is broken, then – You have guns? Emil: Yes Julian: Sometimes I feel Like I've just lost my voice I have now voice I open my mouth to speak – and its just – Gone Emil and Lina: Julian: Why do you have guns if you are not going to use them? Emil and Lina: Julian: So you mean -Emil: This is the time of the sniper Julian: You just get yourselves ready, climb on top of a roof choose your spot and then BANG! (Silence) Julian Kate Lately – He has been saying that he wants to die I don't know - I'm fine with the dying I just hate all this talk It's like - I can't find my voice It's not that I want him dead It's just It's just I wake up, and it's gone

I open my mouth - and it's not there

These are the days of the sniper That's what I think It's all about what you do

I am not his art-project

I can't find my voice and I don't own my own words

Not really He wants to wear me like a sweater

I mean in a way I do

Sneak around in me

Try to get below the line,

but not really underneath.

I don't really own them
I mean, fuck — they are just words
So I try to speak and I just —
No voice — damned it

You know

I am under a spell the earths' crust —

a spell in which my brain is

like a huge maze I like that word – crust

at some point

You've come inside the maze We live on these giant plates

and they keep pushing against each other - pushing and pushing

break away from each other

and I am desperately looking for an exit we are afraid of global warming

but one day

one day

but I can't find it.

There are more and more alleys there are more and more walls

there are more one day in some part of this place

the tension will just be too great and more problems.

There are more and more and they will just

There are more and more meaningless actions

meaningless relationships meaningless locations

meaningless dreams

Just flip

meaningless worries

and crash down

and that will be that

PART 5 - DARKNESS

We have forests
We have lakes
We have mountaintops and valleys
We have all kinds of animals
We have it all and we know it's precious
And all we can feel, is the darkness
All we can think, is darkness

(A beat Julian alone on the stage)

Julian:

in the beginning was the word you did not hear me did not see me did not cover your eyes did not hear a word think a thought did not hear me breathing your breathing it is for you I stand in darkness for you I am night I am the blackness that surrounds me it's like the air in your lungs I pour gasoline over me can you hear the sound of it like water

heavy water that swirls that leaps across the wall the dam that falls to the ground spreads itself out touches your feet you stand barefoot in it it folds around you you do not hear my thoughts not a word you do not know that which is going to happen a work of art that's what will happen we will make a work of art that is what you will do you are all there you are all invited you are all a part of my story you are my work of art your lives your fears your memories your thoughts your feelings the fucking that already goes on in your heads that which you detest the punches the caresses the way you can't stop thinking about your children your cat and the wind fills the hall it caresses our necks it is so cold a rough hand and even if it is there the air is still it is all a totally still as if the air that's there was constituted by our breath as if in this hall on this peninsula we are running out of it the air we breath it stinks soon it will reek of gasoline I have begged you to come you all know each other I know you all you have all become one word for me that's enough that you are here that you know why we know each other we sleep with one another we kill each other we make each other sick we love one another we hate we have had enough of one another and still we want more ... that is all a complete murky darkness ... you sit here like blind as you learn to see with your senses to read with your minds as your fears are being unlocked the singing in you and your heart breaks out into the open out of your narrow chests but you are caught here in this waiting in this silence in the silence of the other and the silencing of others ... as we avoid each other's gaze we are on an island of bliss we are the makers of Utopia that will arise from the truth that I speak we will die you and you and me and you and your child in your home and the dog and the deer as the forest burns down as it all burns down as the oceans rise aflame you will be on this island in an ocean of flames you as the ice turns to heat you are the heart of my art

the eye of the storm
I have this gasoline and this matchstick with it
I will draw your portraits ... you will
burn for my art for
our joint venture
each and every one of you will become
an artist and as one finally
like one... you take leave of your personalities you
will become pure colours you
will become my colours you
will become all ears you
can hear every word I say

(he lights a match)

you rise as I burn for you I stand aflame before your eyes who of you will take his jacket off which one of you will take his jacket off and throw it over me which one of you will try to put out the fire ... as I run through this dark crowd like a fireball to put you all alight you and you and you and you and you ... while we all turn into language not flesh not blood not hair heart only words freedom will blow you wide open turn you into word-bodies language-bodies all languages spoken as one this peninsula is my Babylon and I am Atlantis... we are shadows shadows of words look deep inside you there is light you are all lit up like through a window you can spot your own inner selves can you read your own hearts what is written there in the dusk that which makes what's readable unreadable ... this night smells of gasoline hear how I sing

(a beat)

Its night on the island
Julian stands aflame
The crowd is applauding
The Crocodile is asleep
the Squirrel rests all curled up in the arms of the Badger
he is dreaming of candy floss and little brown nuts
Ekornet ligger i armene på grevlingen
hun drømmer om sukkerspinn og små brune nøtter

Hunter 1:

Do you see that, wedge? Between those two mountains?

Hunter 2:

What wedge?

Hunter 1:

There. From over here it looks as if somebody has struck a wedge between those two mountains – that tiny crack over there, can you see it?

Hunter 2:

Ah, over there.

Hunter 1:

They say that one day it will crack wide open. That an abyss will open up underneath it. Nobody knows when. It could be tomorrow, or a hundred years from now.

(Silence)

Kate is roaming through the house She is searching for something, but she cannot find it She is checking out the breadbin Where are you —

My little crocodile?

Have you gone hiding

− little fox?

Come out! She cries

No need to hide anymore!

Come home

let's play a game together

Let me fill your pockets with candy and

gold

I will build you a palace – I will be whom

ever you want me to be
Look — I am a baby bear
I will get you a spaceship
You'll be the astronauts
I'll be the space-cadet
Let me fetch the sun for you

PART 6 - THE HUNT

Who's there in the woods? It's a squirrel She's crying In her sleep she says

> I don't want to play anymore I don't want to be a squirrel anymore You are lying. All of you!

(Silence)

Sometimes it is as if we are dreaming We just keep on walking Keep on walking and as the children leave the peninsula behind The hunters are hunting

The children are deep in the woods
They are leaving a trail behind them – a plastic bag, a rubber band, a chocolate wrap and a yellow baseball caps
The badger has lost his shoes
He does not know what way to turn

the Squirrel:

Do you think they still remember us?

```
the Fox:
                                                They remember us
                                                the crocodile:
                                                AU!
                                                the Fox:
                                                This way
                                                the Squirrel:
                                                This way
                                                the crocodile:
                                                WAIT!
   Hunter 1:
   Hey - did you hear that?
                                                the Fox:
                                                What happened? Did you fall?
   Hunter 2:
   What?
                                                the Squirrel:
                                                Are you ok?
   Hunter 1:
   There it was again
                                                The crocodile:
                                                I'm alright. I'll manage.
   Over there
   Hunter 2:
   Where
   No
   Are you sure?
   Hunter 1:
   Ja – I heard something. I saw something moving
   Hunter 2:
   Could it have been a fox or something?
   Or a squirrel?
   Hunter 1:
   It could have been a squirrel
The hunters stop
They lower their guns
Listens
   Hunter 1:
   Hush
   There -
(Silence)
```

Hunter 2:

```
And –
              then - Nothing
   Hunter 1:
   But you saw it too?
   Hunter 2:
   Ja – I think –
   Hunter 1:
   It was there – as big as a child?
(Lina turns to Emil)
   Lina:
   Maybe it's not such a big deal
   Whether one lives or dies
   If you get hit, you mean?
   Lina:
   Maybe it's all the same
   What would you miss?
   Don't worry - I am not going suicidal on you
   Emil:
   It's a possibility
   Lina:
   Emil:
   I've always considered it a possibility. Sort of a privilege even.
   That you can shoot yourself in the face if you wanted to
(Silence)
                              PART 7 - GARBAGE
   Julian:
   Did you hear what happened!
   One of the neighbours, that old maths-teacher, he went to pick up his grandson
   at the kinder garden and came back with the wrong kid.
   Imagine
   Returning all happy and content with the wrong kid
   Why are you telling met this?
   Julian:
   It's funny
   Kate:
   Is it?
   Are you scared?
   Are you scared of messing up?
   Forgetting your children
   of something being wrong - going wrong
   of not doing the right thing?
```

Julian:

What do you mean – "doing the right thing" I'm always right t

Lina:

Before I was careful. I recycled every little item.

If I wasn't sure I just put it to the side until later. I started thinking about it like raw material. Paper, plastic and all that. Hazardous waste, electronics, wood, aluminum

Now it seems endless.

Little by little I've just lost my patience. The emotions got me. First it was just a little carelessness. A framed photograph that I just couldn't deal with dismantling it in order for the paper to go with paper, glass with glass, aluminum with aluminum, wood with wood.

I just threw it in a garbage bag and as soon as I did that - the entire system was flawed

So, in the end – that's what we all do

We just stuff it all in garbage bags and drag it to the front lawn and there they just stand

hundreds

thousands of black garbage bags.

No one no longer has any idea of what *is* what: photo albums with kitchen appliances and stereos and books and pamphlets from every organization – clothes.

Heaps of winter coats

one for each winter, and all the tiny fibers in all the other coats,

all the filling

filling the garbage cans

all this winter

heaped up in the front yards

Five thousand pairs of shoes.

in the roundabouts

Smelly old crusty leather piles

In the school yards

dragging with them some filth from some long gone

It nauseates me.

Sometimes I just wish it would all explode, all of it, just so that we don't have to worry about it anymore.

Lina keeps roaming through the fur coats

The shoes

The filth

A piece of art

A piece of shit

Lina (shouts):

I hate things!

Why can't they just self-terminate!

Why can't they just explode!

(Silence)

This is where we are living

This is our home

Kate parks her Qashqai

She's been out looking for the kids. She can't find them

What is it Kate?

Lina enters the kitchen

She enters the living room

She walks upstairs and then down again

```
What is it Lina?
```

```
Lina:
   I cannot bear it anymore
   It's everywhere
   It's like acid – corrosion
What is it -
   the smell /
   - like a cat breaking down inside me
   a porcupine
   a badger
   a seagull, a lumpfish,
   an old rat
   To think how she carried this ugly old mug with her, from apartment to
   apartment, -
   No
She says
   No
She is leaving the basement
She is in the living room
She is holding the jug
She has these candlesticks
She has this Danish statue of white children grimacing
She has these hand-made coasters
She has this African quilt
this silk.
this linen.
these napkin-rings
these silver spoons
these silver forks
these silver knives
This painting of a quiet man
this chair
and this chair
and this chair – and she starts to shoot
at random first
just randomly at her stuff
at her paintings
her china
                                                   Kate:
                                                   I can't find them
her silverware
                                                   Julian:
                                                   You can't find who?
her pots and pans
                                                   Kate:
                                                   They're gone
all the leftovers
```

They're not with the neighbours?

her mother's jug the window in her living room Kate: the windows in her bedroom I can't find them one, two, three, four Julian: I thought you said they were with the neighbors Drop the gun Lina Drop the gun! She goes out She is heading for higher ground Let go of the gun! She lets go of the gun She is not thinking about slugs (Long silence A beat) Hunter 1: Ja Hunter 2: Ja Deep in marsh In the cold In the dark - the children are no longer playing Soon it will be snow The hunters do what hunter do They are hunting They are getting their guns ready They are sharpening their knifes Hunter 2: I was thinking about doing some fishing. Putting out some nets. Hunter 2: Nets here? Hunter 1: Ja. Hunter 2: But that's illegal, isn't it? Hunter 1: Maybe Hunter 2: And you are going to do it anyway Hunter 1: It's only for the good Thinning it out

Hunter 2:

```
Thinning it out?
   Hunter 1:
   The fish are too small. And there's too many of them. So, I am thinning it out
   Hunter 2:
   In the river?
   Hunter 1:
   Ja
   Hunter 2:
   You are thinning the river because there are too many small fish in the pond?
(Silence)
They sit
Darkness is falling
Snow soon covers the silky slopes
The moons up
Only the Fox is awake
She has gone hunting
She does not care about the snow, or the moon
She is not gazing into the fire
She is hunting
She is a turtle too big for her shell
a princess shedding her skin
She is just like her mother -
   Kate:
   It's snowing
   Lina:
   Yes
   Kate:
   Did you hear that?
   Lina:
   What?
   Kate:
   Nothing
   The sound of nothing
   All quiet
   Lina:
   Lina:
   You know, when I started shooting, I just could not stop. I just kept doing it. I
   thought - I'll just go on doing it until there is nothing left. Until it's all reduced
   to pieces. Until it's all gone.
The hunters are in the marsh
Following tiny footprints in the snow
   Hunter 2:
   There!
```

Nei.

```
Hunter 1:
   There. No.
   Hunter 2:
   There.
   Nei –
   Let's look further up the river
(Silence)
   Hunter 1:
   Krokelva?
   Hunter 2:
   Ja.
(Silence)
   Hunter 2:
   That's what it's called
   Because of that guy that lived down there
   Kroken.
   Hunter 1:
   Hunter 2:
   His hand was so deformed that it looked like a hook, all crocked. Like this
   (he shows him) That's what they say, anyways.
   Hunter 1:
   These things happen
   Hunter 2:
   They do
   Hunter 2:
   What is it?
   Hunter 1:
   I'm not sure.
   Hunter 2:
   I think it's a fox. It's not a squirrel, not a hare. Too heavy
   Hunter 1:
   - it might be a fox
   Hunter 2:
   Husssjj
   Look -
   Hunter 1:
   Where
   Hunter 2:
   There
   Under the branches
   Hunter 1:
   It is really big. As big /
```

```
Hunter 2:
   - as a six year-old.
   Hunter 1:
   I got it.
   Hunter 2:
   Wait
   Are you sure it's an animal?
   Hunter 1:
   I got it
   Hunter 2:
   Should we not – I think it's –
   Hunter 1:
The sound of a gunshot
   Kate:
   What was that?
   Julian:
   What was what?
   It was as if fire touched my back.
   Julian:
   I felt nothing
                                                   Emil:
                                                   What was that?
                                                  Linda:
                                                  I don't know
   Julian:
   It was as if the ground moved
                  Hunter 2:
                  Did you get it?
                  Hunter 1:
                  I think so
                  Hunter 2:
                  Look it's running – there – between those two big pines
   Julian:
   Did you feel it too?
This is no island, it's a peninsula
It is what it is. What it'd always been
And there is a quiver
and Kate takes Julian's hand as the hunters hold on to their guns
```

This isn't right

And the snow swirls as the children awakes from their sleep and looks at each other

```
the Squirrel:
   Where is she?
   the crocodile:
   the Squirrel:
   She was here – but where is she?
And they get up
And they start running
And the badger starts falling behind
But they cannot find her
   the Squirrel:
   She's all gone
   We cannot find her
   the crocodile:
   The snow must have covered her tracks
the Fox is deep in the woods
she is not running, she is falling
she gets up
and she falls
she gets up
and she falls
She is panting
bleeding
alone on a slippery slope
underneath the branches
   the Squirrel:
   It's impossible
   She is nowhere
   the crocodile:
   She could be anywhere
   the Badger
   MMMMRRrrrr?
Says the badger, putting down her battle axe
   the crocodile:
   I know, I know – it just won't do
   Let's go home
                                                              Says the Squirrel that is a girl
That no longer pretending to be a squirrel
Let's go home
                                                            Says the Crocodile that is a boy
No longer pretending to be a crocodile
He wants his mother
And the Fox says nothing
It's just breathing. That's all it does, and then it stops
And the ground is shaking
And the fox lies there
And a woodcock says:
```

(the sound of a woodcock)

And the hunter says:

Hunter 1:

There it was again - did you feel it!?!

And an owl, and the minx, and a weasel and the bear and the hare and the beaver And a deer and a fink and even a tiny lemming is there What's wrong? They say

With the forest – why is it so restless?

What's wrong?
They say

With that little fox?

Why is she just lying there? Why is she not moving?

She is beautiful Says the weasel

Will she just lie there?

Says the mouse

Will she never move again?

And the wolf howls

And the birds stops singing – as stones and rocks starts rolling down the slopes

and the rumbling grows higher

and the river spills its water unto the marshes

and the lake rips open like a ripe fruit

Pouring its sweet water into the ocean

as the rivers ripple – as the Badger clings to the Crocodile

As the Squirrel clings to the Badger

And the Crocodile keeps slamming its tail in the mud shouting to see if her voice is bigger than the rumble

As the peninsula starts tearing itself away from the mainland as if it had a will of its own

The Squirrel:

Look at the trees!

Look at the trees!

Look at the trees!

the crocodile:

Look at the hill!

the Squirrel:

look at the forest!

the crocodile:

It's shaking!

the Squirrel:

It is! It is!

the crocodile:

Look at my belly!

Says the Crocodile he jumps and shout between twigs and branches

the Squirrel:

Look at my tale!

Says the Squirrel as the world rips open

Julian stands

ll still now The petrol station is gone The roundabout	
Julian: It's gone	
ye bye children ye bye mainland ye bye hunters	
Julian: How can it be gone?	
	Lina: Emil! Are you there?
	Emil: What?
	Lina: Are you there?
Julian: Kate – I don't want to die now	
Kate: You are not going to die	
	Lina: Can you just hold me!
Julian: I think this is it	
	Emil: What?!
Kate: What?	
	Lina: Can you just hold me!
Julian: This is the world coming to an end	
	Emil: What did you say? Just my luck.
Kate: We're not that lucky	I cannot hear anything for all the noise!
No?	Julian:
Kate: No need to celebrate. We'll survive	
How strange – I don't get it I feel like this is all a metaphor	

Maybe it's all just a metaphor I don't get it Julian You've always been so good with metaphors

Lina:

Can you just hold me

Can you just hold me, just for a minute

(Silence)

If you were a bird

You would see it

A peninsula tide to the mainland and then a crack

Straight across eide

You would see the suburbs, and the lake and the kindergarten

You could see eide

And then the wood and the marshland and the little dead fox

The roundabout gone and a trail of ants

and a tree, with a man tied to it and then suddenly a crack

and you would see how the crack open wider – chewing up the tree – the man – the trail of ants

leaving the interior on one side and the peninsula on the other

PART 8 - THE ISLAND

Lina:

I'we always thought of this as an island anyway

Emil

Well, at least the ferry is still running

Lina:

But no petrol station -

Emil:

_

Do you know, I tried bungy-jumping once. That really worked for me. You should try it some time.

Kate:

Do you miss them as much as I do?

Julian:

That little fox that used to hide under our bed?

Kate:

Yes

Julian:

That little crocodile that always wanted

to eat

his slippers for breakfast Calling it crocodile-food

Kate:

_

Lina:

_

Ah – Smell the grass So fresh in the morning There it is The island that once was a peninsula Floating like on its own like a giant scull, it tips ever so slowly in the water Lina: Isn't it lovely? It's so lovely here, this time of year - on this island? swaying then stabilizing Swaying then stabilizing Drifting further and further from the mainland Away from the woods Away from the children -Fox lies under the branches a little yellow fink watches over it Insects are building nets in its pointed ears (Silence) the Squirrel: I am hungry the crocodile: We'll eat soon the Squirrel and the Badger: the crocodile: We'll find some berries Or mushrooms Or a house the crocodile: I hate mushrooms Let's make a snowman! the Squirrel: Look! Over there – a path! the badger and the crocodile: the Squirrel: Let's take it! the crocodile: What if it takes us all the way into town! the Squirrel: I have a twenty-dollar bill The crocodile: We could get a hot dog, or a pizza, The Squirrel: Or a steak

I want a big, fat bloody steak

The Badger that really is a boy starts humming The Squirrel is right behind him

the crocodile:

Here comes the boogyman

Says the crocodile

the Squirrel:

Here comes the hammerfish

Says the Squirrel

EPILOGUE

(As the characters leaves the stage)

They own the statue of the little girl with the matchsticks.

They own all these Danish statues of white children grimacing.

They own these candlesticks.

They own these hand-made coasters.

They own this African quilt.

They own this silk.

They own this linen.

They own these napkin-rings.

They own this silver.

They own these silver spoons.

They own these silver forks.

They own these silver knives.

They own this painting of dancing women.

They own this painting of a quiet man.

They own this painting of forms and colors.

They own this Turkish rug.

They own this old porcelain.

They own this stereo.

They own these speakers.

They own this TV.

They own this sofa table.

They own this chair.

They own this chair as well.

And this chair.

And this chair.

(The room is empty)

The City Dwellers Complex

City Dwellers is an ongoing sound-based installation project.

It has been going on since 2017, and so far lead to seven presentations and try-outs: City Dwellers # I - 4 at KHiO March 2019.

City Dwellers # 5 and 6 at Vega scene September – November 2019 and City Dwellers #7 at Gallery Bananaz February 2020.

City Dwellers #8 and 9 will be presented at Intonal (Malmø) and at Vårscenefest (Tromsø) the spring of 2020.

City Dwellers consists of a pool of 400 texts recorded in studio and on site.

These texts/voices are either written texts (from this pool), or improvisations on these written texts. Things that occur in the studio while recording. In the recording sessions, new texts emerge inspired by the "old".

Some of the texts in this compilation are also quotes or over-writings of texts from facebook, film, tv, general conversations etc.

In the studio many languages are in use (Norwegian, English, Swedish, French, Farsi, Arabic, Islandic, Dutch and so on).

All the work represented here is in English.

I also work with sociolects and dialects.

The tone in the readings are everyday and verbal, even when the texts has a more literary value. They texts are never "played"/acted out, but sometimes the texts themselves or the situations that occur in the studio lends color and temperament to the reading. I try to make the texts tone, rhythm, content etc. as "active" as the prepared interpretations in the recording situation.

The readers are actors, colleagues, people I bump into, friends and family, and many of the texts have been through several recordings with many different writers. It is this soundmaterial that is the bases for the works when I compose them.

In the finished work polyvocality and simultaneity is of the essence. On paper – this is not easy to "copy", so here you find the texts as material, organized according to a very rough timeline. This means that the more historical material comes first, while the contemporary follows later. Many of the texts are repeated and used several times in works. One could say that a new meaning or a new texts appear, as it gets read a different ways or by a different voices.

In a written compilation of the ground-texts like this, – this will not show. So consider this as what it is – a pool of material to be recorded, composed, combined and recombined.

1

I'VE NEVER SEEN ANYTHING LIKE IT

Wine-leaves everywhere
So thick it covers everything
Deer in the woods
and squirrels
and everything wild
Apples and plums
and turkey, and quail, and pheasants and woodcock
and we're growing melons, and peaches
and plumbs and pears and apples, mulberries and grapes

and there are wild bees for honey, and aromatic herbs growing wild And locals paddling along the ship all the way up-river eager to trade

2

WATCH OUT! Don't mess it up!

Don't drop that cargo You have no idea what those crates are worth

And there is more where that's coming from Fifteen barrels just on this ship!

3

NO, GO FOR THE OAKS Take the big ones first The hardwood The hazel

Go for the hazel!

4

A

SO WHAT DID HE BRING THE COMMANDER?
A wife Crates of brandy, certainly
and three horses —

B Two

A ?

B Two horses, sir In the end sir One of them died sir the day he arrived

5

SHOW THAT SHOVEL INTO THE EARTH BOY!
Can you feel it
Soft as butter. You just sink into it
Have you ever seen earth as black as that
Like butter – I'm telling you –
Cutting through that earth like butter, boy

6

```
В
With what?
It's the season
With what I say
There is only one horse – and he owns it
A
We can't pay for it
I know we can't pay for it
I'll be the horse
You heard me-I'll be the bloody horse
                                          7
IT'S A GIRL!
Version 1:
It's a girl!
It's a girl!
Version 2:
See Marie Therese
See!
A girl!
It's a girl
                                          8
BORN ON THE SECOND OF FEBRUARY (while writing it down)
Born on the second of February
in the settlement
A girl
                                          9
I'M JUST GOING DOWN TO THE LAND
version 1:
I'm just going down to the land
Just for a minute
Just to see
```

Just to check that everything is ok

It's going to be alright	
I'm just going down to check the crops To draw some water	
Short pause	
It's only for a little while	
Look the neighbours are up You can see the lights in the window	
Just you go over to them	
You can go over to them if you feel like it	
Short pause	
Ok	
Ok	
Just stay here then love This is our land now Our house	
_	
Hush	
Listen	
How silent How silent it is	
1	0
DON'T WAIT UP Go to bed – I will take care of it	
1	1
WHAT DID YOU SAY DEAR?	
1	2
GOD IT HASN'T RAINED FOR WEEKS I wish it would rain	
1	3

No, don't worry

1)

IT'S MINE

version 1:

It's mine

They gave it to us

We never took it

version 2:

They gave it to me

version 3:

This is my land now my house

We never took it -

They gave it to me – And it hasn't rained for weeks

Version 4:

I am just going down to the

land

Just to check that everything is ok

version 5:

This is the place

This is my house

Not taken

They gave it to me

16

LISTEN

version 1:

Listen

version 2:

Listen

How silent

You can almost hear the river

You can almost hear the grass grow

17

I'VE NEVER BEEN A GODFEARING PERSON

version 1:

I've never been a God-fearing person

version 2:

A

I've never been a God-fearing person

В

I believe in God

I pray every night

I BELIEVE IN GOD

I pray every night

19

STARTS HUMMING AND CONTINUES TO DO SO

20

STARTS HUMMING, CURSING OR PRAYING

21

LOOK - THE NEIGHBOURS ARE UP

22

SO CAN YOU DO THAT?

Look after it?
Just for a minute?
the dog

— That dog
It
it just keeps on barking
There is no way we can It just barks and barks
every time anybody moves
sits
stands — It's such a light sleeper
just opening a door sets it off and then
it can keep it going for hours

23

TURN AROUND

and smile

– yes.

Just like that!

And twirl!

24

SEVEN MARRIAGES

version 1:

Seven marriages

Seven marriages we celebrated that year

version 2:

Seven marriages

Seven marriages in 1712 -and 43 baptisms

43 baptisms

and 15 deaths And then -The fire 25 FIRE-SESSION: 1. Fire 2. What fire? 3. Who said fire? 4. The forts burning! 5. There is a fire on the lose! 6. Wild-fire? 7. Get it under control! 8. The animals We have to get the animals out 9. Hoist those water-bucket's 10. There is no stopping this one 11. Close the gates 12. We need the horses 13. It's out of control 14. Get down to the river 15. The forts burning down to the ground! 16. God have mercy on us! 26 ARE YOU THERE? version 1: Are you there? version 2: Are you all there? 27 I AM HERE

version 1: I am here

version 2:

Yes, mummy is here

ALWAYS, ALWAYS LOOK OUT FOR EACH OTHER

29

WE ARE A FAMILY NOW, AND FAMILIES STICK TOGETHER

30

DEAR MOTHER (while writing it down)

Der mother
how is it with all of you at home
we had a fire
The summers was so warm and this fire was relentless
No
No (corrects him/herself)
Dear mother
how is it with all of you at home
we are fine
There was a fire her at the fort, a few weeks ago
but we are alright now

31

REMEMBER TO WASH YOUR HANDS

Version 1:

Remember to wash your hands

Version 2:

Remember to wash your hands And your face!

32

IT WILL ALL BE FINE

33

WE'RE GROWING CORN AGAIN NOW and melons, and peaches plumbs and pears and apples, mulberries and grapes

34

WATCH OUT! Don't mess it up! Don't drop that log!

SO WHAT DID YOU BRING?

A new lamp? A new wife? A plow, seeds, horses? Crates of brandy?

We could sure need it!

36

GOD ITS HOT

Version 1: God its hot

Version 2:

God its hot, this summer

37

AND IT HASN'T RAINED FOR WEEKS

Version 1:

And it hasn't rained for weeks

Version 2:

And it hasn't rained for weeks

I wish it would rain

38

IT WAS SUCH A HOT SUMMER

Another incredibly hot summer
And a baker went to the mill with some flour
And the grass was all brown
And the hay was all yellow
And he knocked some ash from his
pipe

39

DON'T WORRY the dogs fine

40

NO!

41

NOT AGAIN!

THERE WILL BE NO SAVING US THIS TIME!

44

AND AFTERWARDS THERE WAS NOTHING LEFT

The town gone

They say they rigged an alter up in the orchard – and held services in the open air

45

HUSH ITS ALRIGHT

It's alright

Husssshhssss

It's going to be alright

I'm here now

It's going to be aaaaalright

46

I AM HERE NOW

47

COME TO THE WINDOW AND LOOK

Α

Look

Look

Come to the window and look

Ponies

Wild ponies

Wild ponies in the street

В

Oh – their back

They've come for the salt

In the barrel's - Outside Mr Marks shop

A

Who owns them?

В

Some farmers – Before – Nobody now, I think

A

_

Look at that white one

Aaaall white

It's all shiny, isn't? Like a silver spoon

THEY ARE SHOOTING AGAIN

```
Α
```

Mum

They are shooting again

Down by the river Up in the hills

В

It's nothing

Α

I heard it

I heard it all true the night

E

It's just some kids fooling around You'll see

A No -The dogs went wild with barking I think they've killed somebody

49

ON THE 6th OF JUNE (while writing it down maybe)

A

On the 6th of June 1706 the dog from the colony bites a local man

В

No it wasn't -

Α

It wasn't what?

В

It was a local dog Not a one of ours

a downstream dog -

A (correcting his report)

– a downstream dog ...

And –

В

 $-\operatorname{it}$ was a a consequence of him kicking the dog, the local an $\operatorname{\textit{upstream}}$ local

He was so severely beaten by commander that -

A

That -

В

He died.

He died, sir

Α

The dog died?
B No, the priest The priest, sir He was walking in his garden, and then he was captured, — by upstream locals — and then a Chief ordered the they release him, the priest, but when he was to pass through the Fort gate he was shot dead by another local and the commander — he ordered the garrison of 15 soldiers to fire and then then they killed them, si
He was walking in his garden, and then he was captured, — by upstream folk — locals — and then a they ordered to release him, the priest, but he was shot dead —
by another local and the commander — he ordered the garrison of 15 soldiers to fire and then then they killed them, sir.
A -
B Thirty of them All dead
A Thirty dogs
B Thirty locals, sir
A 30 dead
B Upstream locals. And then the locals tried to get some other locals from the north to join them and when they refused, the locals from down here attacked the northerners and then the siege happened And now, — and now the count is asking the Governor to intercede —
50
WHATEVER HAPPENS, HAPPENS FOR A REASON
Version 1: Whatever happens, happens for a reason

Version 2:

Whatever happens has already happened, they say

Version 3:

Whatever more could happen after this?

Version 4:

All that can happen has already happened to us

ONCE BESIEGED BY THE LOCALS

And twice burned to the ground

53

SO THERE WAS THIS DOG

eh

It was a like a local dog but, but not from - not from our area but from downstream

and hmm

it bit the commander and ah

as it happened

the commander ended up killing him eh or was it him

I am not sure

but it was the priest - anyway who got dead

he was – he was walking in his garden

and eh and eh

the dog bit the guy

and he got so angry that he went and killed the priest

(small laugh)

this local guy from - from upstream

and then the commander gathered 15 soldiers

and they shot all of them, all the locals

like 30 of them

all dead

And that's how it started (based on impro on text 49 in the studio)

54

AND ALL THIS – WHAT DOES IT HAVE TO DO WITH THAT DOG?

And all this – what does it have to do with that dog? Or that priest? Or that incident in 1706?

55

WELL, THEY SHOT THEM

thirty dead Thirty locals

And then they started moving them up the river

We came up the river

and others came down

And soon they will have nowhere to go

56

NO GOD

- it cannot be -

Could it?

I DON'T KNOW

version 1: I don't know

version 2:

Well, I don't know

58

THEY CAN'T DO US ANYTHING, CAN THEY?

59

COULD YOU PASS THE JAM?

60

I DON'T LIKE THEM BEING THAT CLOSE TO MY HOUSE

61

DID YOU SEE HIM?

Did you see him? That local man The one with the hat?

62

THE LOCALS
They hide in the water
And then they are there
In the night
And
tsjjjjkk
they take their knifes out

63

STOP IT!

You are frightening the children

64

THEY SWIM UPSTREAM

I saw them I see them

WHAT'S THAT DOG BARKING FOR?

67

TAKE THE DOG DEAR

68

WHAT DO THEY WANT HERE?

69

HE WAS JUST

He was just

Just outside the window

70

DID YOU TELL THEM?

That we don't want them We don't want them here

71

THEY ARE HERE FOR THE TRADE

72

THEY WON'T COME

Version 1:

They won't come

Not tonight

Nothing will come of it

Version 2:

It Won't come here, will it?

73

WAR CRIES

War cries

74

THIS WAR

THIS HAS NOTHING TO DO WITH US

76

THEY SAY

Version 1:

They say they are moving inland

Version 2:

They say its all up to the government now

Version 3:

They say It's going to be aaalright

77

IT WAS THE FALL It was the fall of 1790

There had been assaults all through the summer

The army was moving the locals inland

And then two local tribes repelled one assault – killing 183 soldiers in the process and then in the

spring

it was such bad weather – west of the river, – and we had just a few guards there and no barricades

it happened in the morning during breakfast -

78

IT SOUNDED LIKE THERE WERE THOUSANDS OF THEM

79

DON'T GO ANYWHERE NEAR THE RIVER

Promise me

80

THEY ARE CROSSING THE RIVER!

81

I TOLD YOU I told you I told you I told you they'd come in the nigh OVERRUN
Totally overrun
by locals
Upstream locals
The camp was decimated and then
the army took revenge
It was a bloodbath

Hundreds dead

I don't know -

What a fucking surrender

83

WE WERE OVERRUN

Version 1:

We were overrun

Version 2:

We were overrun

Totally overrun

Version 3:

What are we?

Overrun?

Version 4:

We were overrun

Totally overrun

by locals

Upstream locals

The camp was

decimated

and then the army took revenge

84

WHAT A FUCKING

Version 1:

What a fucking surrender

Version 2:

What a fucking bloodbath

Version 3:

What a fucking bloodbath

Hundreds dead

85

WHAT A SENSELESS USE OF GUN POWDER

Version 1:

What a senseless use of gunpowder

THERE WERE ALL THESE STORIES

There are all these stories
Such as having his soldiers go through the mess-line at mealtime over and over again – to give the appearance of being many to those watching from the other side of the river
An army three times its actual size

87

ITS MINE VARIATIONS

1:

It's mine

2: It's mine

They gave it to me

It's my children's

It's my children's children's

4:

It belongs to my family

5:

It's mine

We never took it

They gave it to us

6: It belongs to my family

7: It's mine

We've worked for this in generations

8: Its theirs

It's their future

9: It's mine

It's all we

have

The soil

The food on my table

A mans honour

88

THE BOAT

They say that their boat hit a rock and broke in two that she tried to jump

that she tried to jump the ship with her baby daughter on her hip and that when the found her

washed up on the shore

she had pieces of gold sewn into her skirts ...

89

THERE WAS THIS RUMOU

about this relative of mine – It was kind of a story too

that went around in the family, about this uncle, or a cousin that had fallen in the battle of Midway Creek

and that was exhumed from his grave to be taken home here to this local cemetery that does not exist anymore – that cemetery

They say there is a bakery there now, - after the fire and all.

Anyway – before they took him here

they boiled him

his bones

in this big cauldron

and stuffed the remains into to saddlebags

and so they took the bones here, by horse overland – And they say, – some folks say – and my grandaunt Hilda always used to say, -

That his ghost still walks the flint hills

along the highway up there, looking for the missing bones that they say fell out from the saddle-bags.

90

200 HUNDRED WOUNDED Bruised heads, black eyes, bloody noses But no deaths

91

THERE ARE THESE STORIES

Such as soldiers going through the mess line over and over again — to give the appearance of being an army three times its actual size

92

THE CAMP WAS DECIMATED

And then the army took revenge

93

THE KILLING WAS RELENTLESS

94

THIS CITY HAS SO MANY MANES:

Stove City, Dry Dock City, Cigar City, Salt City, Black Earth City, River City, Beyond the river City Big City, Woodland City, Green City, Runaway City – I don't know what to call it anymore

HE FELL

Both his leg

His back

they broke

He will never walk again

Talk again

Both of them

Broke

Like matchsticks

His left arm – in five different places

No point trying to fix it

He just lies there

But his face is the same

I feed him

Wash him

Not a word

His eyes watching me

My man

My man

His face just the same

Not a scratch - just blood pouring out of his left air

They said he was dead

But I knew he wasn't

He will live

I don't hate him for it

For living

For falling

It just sucks the blood out of me

There is no warmth in this house anymore

All the children

Even the youngest out

working

At the mill, at the works, at the chicken-farm

No coal left for the fire

Tonight I will sleep with the dogs

96

I'LL JUST GO DOWN TO THE LAND version 2

I'm just going down to check the crops

I'm just going down to check the crops To draw some water

Don't sit up

Go to bed – I will take care of it

I'LL JUST GO DOWN TO THE LAND version 3

I'll just go down to the land

I'll just go down to the land

Just for a minute

Just to see

Just to check that everything is ok

No, don't worry

It's going to be alright

I'm just going down to check the crops To draw some water

Don't sit up

Go to bed

Short pause

Why should you?

Why should you worry?

Why should you sit up?

It's only for a little while *Pause*

Look the neighbours are up their just across the street You can see the lights in the window

Just you keep the lights on Just you go over to them You can go over to them if you feel like it

Ok

Ok

Just stay here then love Just you warm yourself some milk The children are sleeping

They are sleeping I say It's all safe I say This is our land now Our house

97

WHO CARES WHO RULES THIS PLACE

The fort has gone to seed and it's a puddle of mud in the autumn and we are practically snowed in winter Not brick house in sight Why on earth would people want to fight over this place

98

BORN ON THE 17th OF NOVEMBER
In the middle of a thunderstorm at Point Gross
Dead at four o'clock in the morning
on the 20th
Father's name Boy
Mother's name Betty

SHE WAS LIKE THAT, MY BABY soft as beeswax she was born

birdlike

100

BIRDFACE

Be close
Betty-birdface
I will still marry you
in a sandpit
In a bakery, in a butcher-shed
I promise
I promise as before — I will be bothersome like a brother
I'll be fierce
Like a new-born — and Boy to

101

DON'T CRY

no one

Version 1: Don't cry

Version 2:

Α

Don't cry

В

I'm not

102

I CAN'T MAKER HER STOP CRYING

103

THIS HAS NOTHING TO DO WITH US

104

I DON'T SEEM TO DO ANYTHING RIGHT

105

THEY SHOT HIM IN THE HEAD
Hung him in a tree – took all his clothes off and left him there
This boyans
Just left him there – hanging
Outside the school
Yes

It was a school	
And you know the birds	
The birds – they always go for the eyes	
No my aunt told me She saw it herself	
	106
THAT´S WHAT HAPPENED	
Straight through the head	
	107
ARE YOU CALLING ME A LIAR	
	108
THEY SHOT HIM	
A They shot him	
B Who?	
A That walker	
He just passed by – and they shot him I cannot believe it	
It's the boyans – they did it	
	100
	109
IT WAS A LOCAL He did it	
	110
THAT'S A LIE	
	111
WILLO/C A LIAD!	
WHO'S A LIAR! I saw it myself	
	112
I DON'T I IKE THEM	
1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1	

I DON'T LIKE THEM

A

I don't like them coming up here

```
The natives bought them
its labour
                                        113
FUR-TRADER ASKIM OWNED EIGHT
William of Gross Point owned 2
and the mayor, nobody knew how many he had
В
Not many, I'm sure
A
В
Not natives anyway -
He only let God-fearing people into his home
A
Strange people these boyans
В
I would not call them people
What would you call them? Beasts?
В
Not people at least
                                        114
BEATRICE
A
Beatrice?
В
He called her that
And you received him?
In your tea-rom
В
That man Boy is just a boy
Who's the mother?
A
Betty
В
Aren't they all called Betty?
```

C That scrawny thing in the kitchen? В Beatrice That's a name to pick What about it! C This baby This Beatrice creature – That boy ... Surely he – we all – knew she would not live his mother being like that No meat on her A/C The boy wants to put it on her tombstone That's why he stands there That's why he stands there and just won't leave As if it wasn't enough with the upstream and the downstream ganging up all through the summer 115 IT'S JUST NOT TRUE WHAT THEY SAY That he had boyans 116 NO No No no no - Not him. He never had any 117 THAT'S JUST A RUMOUR 118 WHAT RUMOUR? 119 I GUESS THERE WERE LAWS AGAINST IT 120

A domestic

NOT UP HERE

NOT ANYMORE

There is a law against it now

123

YOU CAN ALMOST HEAR THE BANTER going on All the boyans playing cards Over at Mr Marks shop

124

SHOW ME THAT HAND

125

BEEN NO BETTER HAND THAN MINE put down a bet or nothing will come of it

126

BE BRAVE

Bet

better

127

COME HOME

128

AND IN HIS SHOP

And in his shop there were photographs of abbeys and ancient places. Of birches, brooks, canals, cattle, churches, cottages, crags, crosses — dingles, farms, ferns, foxgloves, gables, ivy, land, locks, oaks, ponds, rustic bridges, and tombs — and watermills, windmills, walls and woods.[i]

129

I SAW HER, I SAW HER!

that black eyed, olive-skinned maid I told you about!

I saw her

In the marked – she was there!

She's not from here

She is from the other side of the tracks

She was there

At the marked

She got on this pony-cart

With this family

CAN WE SEE IT?

135

YOU CAN'T STOP ME FROM SEEING IT?

136

COME ON EVERYBODY

Version 1:

Version 2: Come on everybody! you too woman We're off to the park to see the elephant! 137 WHERE ARE WE GOING? 138 DID YOU SEE THE PARADE? I mean – what a silly thing to drag through those swampy streets What did it look like? It did not even look like a boat It looked like a badly shaped canoo mounted on wheels 139 BUT Don't you wish that you had been out there? Just to see the parade 140 THAT SCHOOL Α No, I don't like her going there To that school В What do you mean, that school? I wish she could go to the other school В But that's all the way across town I don't understand Why would you want that? All her friends go there, they learn French Why would you want to drag her all across town? Α В

Come on everybody!

Α

Why would you do that to her?

_

Is it that teacher?

A

-

В

That's just a rumour

Α

It's the truth

В

We do not know that

A

I don't want her near him

I don't want that woman anywhere near my child

В

She is a good person, I have spoken to her

Α

She has been teaching locals

F

She is just an idealist

Α

Even downstream locals

В

She means well – she's just...

Α

You don't understand

В

She's just mislead

Look

I'll make sure

I'll make sure that none of the boys will have any of her classes

Now calm yourself

Just calm yourself

141

THE CARNEVAL

В

Pauls going as a bear

Α

Why don't you go as the president or something?

I WANTED THIS FERRET
That's all I wanted it
I'd seen them
People having them
As pets
White once
All cute and lively and cuddly one that I could train and go rabbit hunting
But my mum said no
Just no
Whatever – just no
But my grandfather – he loved me

He could never say no to anything and so he bought me this ferret An old one not a baby one a cute one, but this old, one-eyed, mean-looking, smelly old ferret that smelled Gigantic To big for its cage And I did not dear to take it out or hold it Or anything It was just in there Staring at me and then one day it just escaped and my sister had this cat this beautiful, white cat and it killed it the ferret my sisters cat there in the living room 145 STAY 146 I DON'T LIKE THESE RULES 147 WAIT 148 LOOK AT ME 149 DON'T LOOK AT ME 150 THE QUEEN В The queen A The queen? She's like 70! В

So who do you want to be?

HE HAS ACRES AND ACRES OF FRUT TREES

And flowers from all over the world

And in the evening, all the paths are brilliantly lit and there is a garden restaurant and floats of music and even a whole house filled with the finest specimens of ornithology minerals, coins, thirtyseven wax-figures and even a grand Cosmorama

152

NO COME ON

Α

No come on!

В

I don't know

Α

It will be fun — all those people coming over from the other side of the border it's not pricy this place $They say you can even shoot your own turkey \\ live at the bar$

153

HE IS DEAD DRUNK

No, he reeks of it I'm telling you He's dead drunk – that's what's the matter with him!

154

STARTS SINGING LOUDLY AND CONTINUES TO DO SO

155

SO LET THE POOR MAN IN It's pouring down out there!

156

QUIET SUNDAY

For the first time in years

The first day of the week with becoming solemnity

A great day for our organization: all the bars, the bear-gardens closed

A No, he is a roadbuilder He never was in copper Who told you that? A Roads That's all I say He's building roads 158 WHAT NONSENSE 159 **FLOODS** The roads flooded No-roadsNo its flooded I said It's all the rain 160 ON HORSEBACK You have to go on horseback you have to take the canoo It's the only way 161 HE WALKED STRAIGHT ACROSS THE TERRITORY 162

YES, THEY ARE BUILDING ROADS

163

IF THEY COULD JUST MANAGE TO KEEP THE COWS OFF THE ROAD

164

No, there is no copper - they will never find any

THEY ARE BUILDING ROADS NOW

166

ACROSS THE RIVER

It's sort of a chees-box on a raft He has two ponies propelling this wheel At the side of the boat taking people across the river

167

MR SILVER-HEELS

He owns everything now Even the public bathtubs They call him Mr Silver Heels

168

POSTER

Rare spot at the gardens!

Two bears and one wild goose will be sat up to be shot at

Or chased by dogs on the 20th of October at 2 O'clock

169

THEY CAME FOR THE PONY-RAISES

170

THE DOGS No -The dogs went wild with barking I think they killed somebody

171

It's just some kids fooling around You'll see

172

200 WOUNDED

Bruised heads, black eyes, bloody noses

But no causalities

DEAR MOTHER (while writing a letter) Dear mother - how is it with all of you at home Here - I am sorry to inform you - an epidemic of smallpox have broken out The summers has been heavy with fever The killing relentless

174

NO PERFORMANCES

I told you -

There won't be any performances today

They are shutting up the theatre

175

NO, I MEAN IT

176

DON'T GO

Version1:

Don't go

Version 2:

Don't go

No don't go out

177

WAIT TIL IT'S OVER

Version 1:

Better wait her

Version2:

Better wait until it's over, til it passes

Version 3:

Give it a day or to and then it will be over Just like last time

178

EMPTY STREETS

There is nobody in the street –

They say old Israel came through the town with his carts laden full with dead bodies

179

IT'S ALL A BIT SAD NOW

180

REAL SAD

I don't know
He just never leaves the house anymore
He used to be so
social
He never goes to dances
Never goes to the shop
Never takes the cart out
He just sits

there
In his

chair

I think I am the only one

that calls on him and he never wants to do anything when I get there Like play cards or $-\,$

His sons says, that when they call, that they might play the occasional game of chess which he always wins

181

THEY USED TO TRADE ALCOHOL FOR PETS BACK THEN

 $1\,8\,2$

YOU DON'T UNDERSTAND

183

DO YOU HEAR ME?

Version 1: Do you hear me?

It's your mother talking

Version 2: Do you hear me? It's your father talking

Version 3: Do you hear me? It's me talking.

I BELIEVE IN GOD

In things I can
touch
In doing the right thing
In hard work
In reading
In loads of reading – Reading always helps

185

EVERYTHING IS GOING TO BE ALRIGHT

186

HEAVY WORK

Α

This boy you're seeing - What does he do?

В

He's down at the mill

A

Heavy work – lifting those sacks – sure does your back in

В

-

Α

Upstream is it? The works?

В

Now it's down by the yard, between Orchard and Plum

187

STEAMSHIPS

Look!

The steamships in

188

YES, THATS THE BIGGEST ONE YET

189

LIFTING AND CARRYING

Just lifting and carrying in Lifting and carrying Lifting and carrying all day long

WHAT KIND OF WORK DOES HE DO?

Α

So, this boy of yours, what kind of work does he do?

В

He's down at the dock

Α

Shipworking?

В

Engine building, I think

191

DO YOU REMEMBER

And do you remember
Do you remember John
Us is-skating on the frozen river
Watching them lords and ladies – all dressed up in
sable robes, grilling venison and drinking Madeira wine
And staying up all night
And dancing the money-musk, and the reel, and hunt-the-grey-fox, and the german-three
and the pillowdance and you walking me home in the snow

192

RUM-RUNNERS

Look at those rum-runners!

Driving their cars across the ice!

193

THE ORCHARD

So yes
That's what they do
If they want fish for dinner
They just stroll down to the river and get some
And if they want fruit for desert
They just stroll by their orchard and pick some

194

THERE IS A NEW FACTORY BUILD they say that just the one Just this one Will employ 90 000 workers

WATCH OUT Version 1: Watch out for the dogs Version2: Watch out for the dogs Watch out for the cats, the kids, the corner Version 3: Watch out for the boogeyman -Version 4: watch out for the girl in the jersey knitwear Version 5: Watch out for the august stock market corrections Version 6: Watch out for your health Version 7: Watch your health insurance 196 YOU HEARD ME RIGHT Yes, Yes – you heard me right That's exactly the word I used 197 DO YOU HEAR ME? Sit up when I am talking to you It is your father talking 198 DON'T LISTEN TO ME 199 IT WAS ONLY A DREAM

NO PROGRESS

No, there will never be any progress Not with that lot As long as they have their shindigs and their brandy and their women and their cars That's all they care for

200

SHADES

Oh – Shades? That's an ooold place
If you ever want to get pissed in a really old place
Go to shades
You can still shoot fowls and turkey there
geese and chicken too
at Thanksgiving and x-mas, they put the fowls in a
box or something, at some distance in the rear
and then when the fun is over
they raffle off the victims in the bar
one should think one still lived in the seventeen hundreds

202

SURE BENDS YOUR BACK

Α

Sure bends your back this work

В

It does

Α

Brutal to the body

В

Brings money though

Α

Be that right

203

A RIVERBOAT AND A MANDOLIN ORCHESTRA

What do I remember the most?

A riverboat lunch with a mandolin orchestra

204

WHICH BAR

You know
Back then – if you wanted to know where anybody
Or whomever was
You just asked: which bar

205

RUNAWAYS

That tailor Yes That's why he built that bar To hide runaways No its true

They hide there — waiting to get across the border They smuggle them across the border at night They have this tunnel and they call the other side Do you know what they call the other side? They call it dawn Over here with us, its dusk And there
On the other side of the river — There is dawn

206

RUSSIAN JEWISH GRANDFATHER

A

I told her that my Russian Jewish grandfather Got busted running sugar for that uptown gang

E

Did she believe you?

Α

But it's true

207

A SILVER SPOON IN A CROWS NEST

That's what they found: a silver spoon in a crows nest, a pink rubber band

208

LIST OF SHHIPS

Superior

Sunnyside -

Cambridge

Champion

Vulcan – a schooner

Jane Bell – a Bark

Sweatheart

Delaware

and R. N. Rice – a Tug

Pathfinder

Reindeer

Monticella

Annie L. Young

S. Baldwin

Jenny Briskow

Hope and then Monitor – a bulk carrier

Scow No 1 and No 2 in 1886

Niagara – the Tug in 1887

Then Inter-Ocean

Victoria

Queen of the Lakes

And Myrtle

Fortune

Excelsior

and then in 1878 – the first ferry in 1888 – the third and the forth Then Transport and Garland and Iron Age and Lee and Boston and Algomath Sappho Albony Landsown Pioneer Promise Arrow – that was a good one and Argo Aragon Troy Tashmoo Orego and Liza 209 IT'S ME 210 DID YOU KNOW? Did you know!? В What? Α Did you know that the first elections we had in this town took place in a bar 211 PEOPLE HERE ARE NOT THE SAME I don't think I was ever meant to go to the city I never thought the city was all that people here are not the same

212

I'M JUST A FARMBOY REALLY

 $2\,1\,3$

THE SMALLEST TOWN IN THE STATE

I've always been alright with stuff like that — being from a small town and all

being from one of the smallest towns in the state Not even a town if you think about it just a church and a gas station a music pavilion and the buss-stop

214

JUST FOR A MINUTE

Can I put my head in your lap? Just for a minute -Just in your lap —

215

YES I AM HERE

Version 1:

Yes, yes. I'm here.

Version 2: Yes. I am here. It's me.

Version 3: I'm right here.

216

WE SHOULD NEVER HAVE COME

I knew it

We should never have come

217

DON'T WORRY

Don't worry

They would never dream about doing something like that

218

WE HAVE TO HELP THEM

We have to help them
They can't read or write or anything

219

I WILL BE HOME SOON

Don't answer the door.

Just keep the lights on I'll be home
I'll be home soon.

No, nobody is coming

220

MURDER BY THE SCHOOL

They shot him in the head took all his clothes off and left him there Outside the school
Yes
It was a school
And you know the birds
The birds – they always go for the eyes

No my aunt told me She saw it herself

221

LOOK AT ME

Look at me Open your eyes and look at me!!!

222

A NEWCLEAR BOMB BY THE CARLSBERG CAVERNS

You know — once when a nuclear bomb was dropped nearby the Carlsbad caverns some time in the fifties as a test — the government watched the lake in that cavern very carefully, to see if the blast caused ripples to appear on the pool's surface. None did.

Not a ripple.

Non

The earth — It must just have swallowed up all the vibration

223

CAVES AND BATS 1

Did you know that 1942, the Army trapped thousands of guano bats in the Carlsbad Canyon in New Mexico and put them in a refrigerator to trigger hibernation. Then they strapped 9 gram bombs in 1 gram containers filled with kerosene onto the bats, held on by a string on their chests. The idea was they'd release these bats over Japanese cities. The bats were supposed to chew their way through the string to get the bombs off, and leave them where they did. But in the trial run, some bats never woke up. And others escaped, and set fire to a hangar and a general's car and so the program ended in 1943.

CAVES AND BATS 2

There is connections: Bats and caves. Caves and bats.

Few military conflicts in history have ever been conducted without the use of caves. Think of Jesse James.

He hid out in caves, and in 1863 excavations uncovered an 18 story deep city dug into soft lava rock, that could protect 20,000 people, — in Cappadocia, Turkey. And in France, during WWII, they dug a huge underground complex of tunnels and spaces, with an aboveground fort around it, called Maginot Line.

And there is the Vietnam War.

The North Vietnamese used caves and underground dwellings

And Afghanistan. Not to mention Afghanistan and the Zhawar underground complex in in the mountains up there.

The Taliban know their caverns.

There is this connections. Between war and caverns.

Caverns and and bats.

Some have suggested that since bats fly into caves and that since the Taliban is in caves, we should try this type of thing again, but scientists say the problem is bats that are kidnapped, disoriented, and then dropped from 1,000 feet, do not act normally and fly into caves. They act in unpredictable manners instead.[ii]

224

AS IF LIFTED

and the bed was moving

A moment
it is as if everything just floated
As if she was lifted
As if the world had turned into liquid
balancing on a breath
like a baby's
when it has just stopped crying
a quiver
running through everything

225

READING ALWAYS HELPS

I don't know if I believe in destiny Or that it's every man for himself I believe in luck Or hard work And reading Loads of reading reading always helps

226

ARE YOU STILL UP (on the phone)

Are you up Are you still up?

Are you up? You shouldn't be up.

No, no. Don't wait up for me. There is no need to. No need to be up - No reason to wait I'll catch a bus. I'll catch a cab.

I'll get on the subway.

What noices
Just don't answer the door.
Just don't you answer — do you hear me?
What noices is that
No
And don't you open —
And not your sister either. You tell her — If she wakes up.
If there is anybody
there at the door

Do you here me? Listen to your mother Just keep the lights on Just keep the lights on Until I'm there

*

(on the phone)

- Buttercup Is that you?
- -Why are you answering the phone?
- Why aren't you sleeping?Why are you up?You shouldn't be up.
- And your sister?
 She isn't sleeping?
- She is sleeping?Why couldn't she sleep?Why is she not sleeping
- I'll come

I'll come right now You keep the lights on.

Just keep the lights on.

Keep the television on.

I know – I know. Just to keep you company. Just until I'm there

227

COME AS FAST AS YOU CAN

228

BOOK CLOSE TO FACE

A
My father
He gave me this other name
because I read all these books
Constantly reading they said
He called me
Book close to face
But like

```
in his own tongue
In his language
В
Like –
A
I couldn' even say it.
I'd like to hear it.
I couldn't event pronounce it.
В
I'm sure it's beautiful.
I can't even remember it
even
to be honest
I'd had to ask my father next
BOOK CLOSE TO FACE IMPRO
I had it in my family
I was called – stare in the air ...
From my father
That's so funny
My father – gave me this other name
I was constantly reading - and spacing out
daydreaming
And he called me stare in the air – and – he but like in his own tongue
In his own language
В
Like
I – I don't – I don't remember anymore really
ehm
I don't know
В
I am sure it's beautiful
I would have to actually talk to him
I would have to talk to my father first, and find out.
В
Hm
```

*

```
You know my father – he gave me this other name
Because I was constantly reading
He called me Book Close to Face
You know my father - he gave me the name - stare in the air
Because I was daydreaming a lot
A
And how would he say it?
В
Stierom
Stierooom
A
Stierom?
В
Stierom
And the other version was - eeeh Guck in die luft
Laughter
В
Mmm
A
Mm
В
Do you have a second name?
Α
A second name?
В
I had two
I actually I do not remember it
I don't remember how to pronounce it
He said it in his own tongue, his own language
В
Like – like what?
I don't remember
В
I'd like to hear it
A
I'd had to ask him
A
```

I am sure its beautiful

WHAT AM I? A Close your eyes В A Close your eyes Say what am I В Close your eyes Close your eyes and feel me So-What am IВ No. Further down Further В Oh Fuuuuury A Its reeeeaaaal fur As real as can be В A So what am I В It's soft

B And warm A

A Isn't it

Mmhm В A minx? Can I taste it? Α No В Can I smell it A No tasting No smelling Just touching В No that's not allowed В So there are rules? Ok Ok A So В You'r a little baby rabbit You're a kittykat You're a monkeypaw You're a baby bear all warm and snug 230 A SHINY SLIPPERY THING A fox deep in his cave A shiny, slippery thing -A baby bear all warm and snug Oh let me see you Oh why don't you let me in

231

LAUGHTER SINGLE

 $2\,3\,2$

THE MAN WHO ATE HIMSELF TO DEATH

By the way – did I tell you about that man who ate himself till death?

234

NO, LET GO OF ME

No, let go of me Let go of my hand

235

WE WILL BOTH FALL
Just let go of me, or we'll both fall

236

CAN'T WAIT UNTIL EVERYTHING IS BACK TO NORMAL

237

FACE DOWN

I don't know
I don't know this man
They found him in the streets, face down
all his in intestines were gone

238

THIS TOWN IS ALMOST BANKRUPT NOW ANYAWAY

239

THEY ARE COMING

They're here
They are coming

240

DREAM OF CHILDREN BEING TRANSFORMERS

I had this dream
This strange dream
the children — being transformers — or robots or zombies
hiding in the bushes watching us
and we were having this barbeque party
everybody laughing and drinking

THE THINGS WE ARE DOING TO EACH OTHER

Version 1:
I imagine her
touching herself
She is thinking about me, my wife
It turns her on
The things we are doing to each other

Version 2:

My neighbor wears this really tight skirt its green

I find her at e-bay. at finn.no She is selling her dress. She is selling her shoes, her coat, her dishwasher She is selling her fridge, her chairs, her pots and pans

Sometimes I see her carrying out her trash Big bags of it

I awake at night thinking about her her trash her house where the rooms are situated: The kitchen, the bedroom, the hallway I see her standing there – her mobile in one hand, her coat in the other

I imagine her touching herself – thinking about me – about my wife – and the things we get up to

242

I BELIEVE IN LUCK

some people just have more luck than others I believe in luck I believe in that

243

THE FREAKY WHITE BOY

A

And this car came driving down the street real slow
No headlights
Just silently driving in the dark
Down the road
And this kid jumped ut
This tiny kid — no more than fourteen
All white and freakly
And he had this bat
This baseball-bat — and he thumped him

B

Who?

Α

This other boy

A tall musculare looking one And he just collapsed Went down on his knee like And then he thumped him again В Who? Α That freaky boy At the left of his scull Like right behind his ear – and he just like keeled over on the side And then there was this other car It just came out of nowhere And these local boys jumped out Huge, tattooed guys with mohawks and army boots And then it just exploded The whole street – it just went crazy 244 THEY SHOT HIM – THE DIALOGUE They shot him Who? A He was just stopping at red light В Where? Does it matter where? В Was he local? What do you mean local? What do you mean where? Don't you care? В Of course, I care People just go about shooting people at random Just like that В It wasn't at random He just stopped for red В

Yes, but it wasn't at random

A And he wasn't a local What do you mean a local? You mean - you are sure he wasn't local? Α В Well anyways - it wasn't at random. They probably just wanted his car 245 KICKING AND KICKING HIM Version 1: They just kept kicking and kicking and kicking him Version 2: And you just kept on kicking and kicking and kicking and kicking and kicking and kicking her in the face And you feel like running - but you don't know where Version 3: They just kept kicking and kicking and kicking and kicking and kicking him He had this knife This really long Japanese looking knife And his eyes was all wild 246 HE HAD TATOOS RUNNING ALL THE WAY UP HIS SCULL 247 I SAW NOTHING

No

I saw nothing

No

I did not see anything

248

YES I SAW HIM

Yes, I saw it It was him That fucker did it 250

DO IT!

Just do it!

Just bash his scull inn

251

WE NEVER SHOULD HAVE MOVED HERE

Why did we move here

We never should have moved here

252

LOOK, HIS FACE IS ALL GONE!

253

RIOT SEQUENCE 1

A

Tanks

В

WHAT

Α

Come and see

В

Not tanks

Α

There

В

Is it the army?

It's the luting That's why

В

It's political

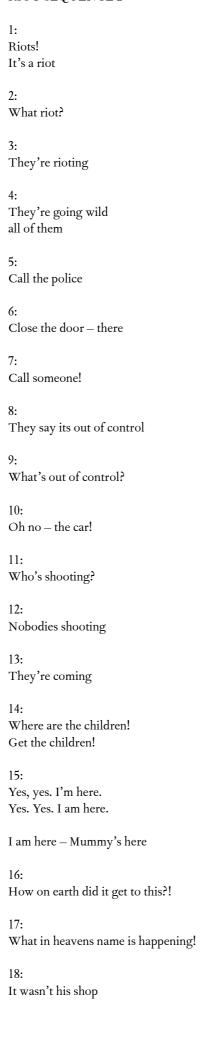
People can't just go around taking whatever they can get their hands on

В

It's the riots – not the looting Its political, I'm telling you Tanks Tanks in our streets

I can't fucking believe it

RIOT SEQUENCE 2



19.

Look what I got!

20:

What are you going to do with that toaster?

21:

It's too heavy!

22:

No one trusts the police

23:

It's going to be alright
They know what they are doing

24

Do they know what they are doing?

25.

Get it under control!

26:

Their animals, the lot of them

27:

We should never have moved here!

28:

They are looting the stores!

29:

We are a family now, and families stick together

254

CHIRST MAN

Christ man Why do you leave your shoes lying around! And what's this bread doing on the table Now its all dry and hard

255

MY IDEAL SHRINK

If I could choose my ideal shrink
He would be like this guy — that repairs cars
And then you go to his garage
And you talk, and he listens
He can listen to cars — so He can listen to people
And he likes it
And you notice it, and it makes feel ok

And his wife makes cookies and they get like reeealy popular because people find it relaxing you know to be with this guy, and his wife and his cars

THE SNIPER

Off course it's psychological

```
I mean - There is a certain kind of framework that you are supposed to fit into
Consensus paralyses action
I mean - if the idea of what you cannot do is stronger than the idea about what you can do
В
Like the sniper
C
What about the sniper?
When he hits
C
I mean – there is the voice of reason and then the will to act and then –
В
the sniper -
These are the days of the sniper That's what I think It's all about what you do and what you
say Cause and effect Cause and effect
Like when the link is broken then – If what you say – does not mean anything
Like –
              There is no effect
C
And the sniper?
That's what I mean
If the link is broken, then –
C
You have guns?
В
Yes
C
Α
Sometimes I feel
Like I've just lost my voice
I have no voice
I open my mouth to speak – and its just –
        gone
It's just a feeling
It's psychological
I am sure it's psychological
```

SILENCE

C

Why have guns if you are not going to use them?

A/B

_

В

this is the time of the sniper

Α

You just get yourself ready You chose the spot Get on top of a roof Find your position and then BANG!

And then you get it over with

257

SPACE AGE

I mean that's why they call this age the $\mbox{\rm Space}-\mbox{\rm Age}$

258

THE 1 %

The first thing that popped into my head after reading this was images of 1% ers leaving a bunch of huddled and scared masses, on luxuriously decked out-space shuttles.....

259

I CAME FOR MILK

I came in for milk to borrow some He stood by the fridge and they had all these notes on the refrigerator door Not real notes just words Strange words Like: tribe corruption family good rape Words like that Like some people have just randomly across their refrigerator door and I think about Mary -

She dreams of owning a small Deli in her own skyscraper and now she drives

At least once a month she drives

I see her driving off down G avenue four a clock in the morning with a gun in the glove compartment –

Lately it just happens all the time

I see her as I return from the night shift

Always hard to get to sleep

I am such a light sleeper those first hours and I hear her car

Almost once a month – she takes that drive

to find a broken front window

They have been running it for 27 years

that deli

leasing it from a guy that still has all his confirmation-money in unopened envelopes.

It used to be great down here

Now the alarm wakes her up in the middle of the night

and she picks up the gun

and she gets into her car and drives all the way down

Onto the freeway

Towards the river

picking up cardboard on the way

to stop the alarm

clear away the glass -

wait for the police that never turns up before long after they have opened in the morning.

261

This is the thread in my hand

This is my hand

No more children

There just is no room for it -

This is the thread in my hand

This is my hand

This is the thread as it passes through it

I've told you I've told you

Don't kiss me like that - there is no room for it

This is the thread in my hand

This is my hand

This is the thread as it passes through it

As it enters the machine

As the machine eats it up

As my hand reaches out

and touches the metal, my knee, the softness of the wool

Yes I love you

-

This is the machine

Reds, blues, greens, yellows

It is in my hand – the wool – my mouth sore, the taste of beans and greens No more

children I say – no more

When you sleep

I kiss you

My hand is hard

It is the work

It is the noise – the dark is so quiet I cannot sleep

See

See

Snow falling

IT'S LIKE A TRIBE

It's like a tribe

It's like a very corrupt tribe

263

20 BOXES OF FROZEN PIZZA

When I walk through my neighborhood I hold my phone up and move my lips
Pretending that I am talking to someone so that I do not have to stop and chat because

I've had enough of that
of my neighborhood stopping me at random
like in the stairwell
or calling me over and over again
on the phone
sometimes in the middle of the night
And one time
one of them just came towards me
and like
moved straight into my private space
and then he started reading this poem
this like really sexual poem
into my face

So now sometimes when the phone calls I just don't answer

remembering the time

when one of my neighbors called me like twenty times the same night

offering me 20 boxes of frozen pizza

And this guy
he is like
really big
really tall
really heavy looking
He murdered this man

Everybody knows it

He put a radio inside him and he died

264

I HOLD THE FABRIC IN ONE HAND

I hold the fabric in one hand And the ribbon in the other It's snowing outside No sound Just snow The needle and the thread The thread and needle I hold the ribbon in one hand The fabric in the other My selection of feathers My selection of buttons My selections of linings and beads

I am thinking of poppies

I am thinking about leaving this house

I am thinking about the sound of snow that has no sound at all

The ribbon in one hand

The fabric in the other

Dust on the floorboards, the mantelpiece - not moving

I am not moving

How long since I moved

Just the snow

Just this needlework

Just this endless row of hats

Ladies

Laughter

Tea

Sacks of coal

I need to buy another sack of coal

I need a hand against my neck

Sometimes I feel as if I am dead from the waist down

Is this age?

The ribbon in my hand, the dust, the dead fire – the sound of snow falling

Blue

Stacks of blue

Shades of blue

My beads - emerald, crimson, bone-white

The china in my cup

I have to let go of it – the ribbon

Dear hand - you have to let go of it

The work is never over

I have to let go of it

This fabric

This hand

A pair of scissors in the wicked basket

All this beauty

feathers

the ribbon

in the snow

a raven black cat across the lawn

a raven black cat across the lawn

a raven black cat across the lawn

265

DOG ON ACID

In my village

everybody knows everybody

And this man

this man -

he tried to murder his grandmother

He used to do acid and then he gave acid to the dog and he put his dog

that was on acid

on this little boat - and just sent this boat

far out into the ocean

- Can you imagine?
- A dog
- This dog

on a tiny boat all alone far out on there

266

DEEP SORROW HIT TODAY

Deep sorrow hit today

I've always thought that the right wing backlash was a predictable result of and a response to the strength of progressive gains; in a way a measure of all the progress we have made in the last decades in trying to dismantle racial, gender, sexual identity and class inequalities. *Occupy* gave me hope, *Black Lives Matter* gives me hope, *350.org* gives me hope, *Code Pink* gives me hope and *Standing Rock* gives me hope — these have all changed the terms of our... national conversations and that's amazing! And I thought we had come far enough, and there were enough of us, to be able to keep the forces of bigotry at bay. But I was wrong.

I can't believe that all the things that I have worked for over these last 4 decades – that these are all in danger of being obliterated now

I mean this can't be it – can it? (Kristin Nordreval on facebook aftert the Trump election)

267

THEY NEVER COME AROUND HERE ANYMORE

268

IT'S MY FATHER

I worry about him – I mean – this is all he knows

All he's ever done

That place – it's his life

I mean – fuck them

Fuck them

I mean it. Really – screw them all

Every day he's been going there

Keeping it all neat and tidy – the brushes, the scissors, the shampoo

The same chair

The same smell

The same old customers

Just

older

And now they want to chuck him out

These entrepreneurs

They've bought it

All of it

That whole apartment block and now they want to get rid of them – the tenants the kebab-joint, the brick-a-brack-shop, my father's saloon –

The flower shop was the first to go
There is some kind of scruffy art-place there now
Keeping the space warm and paid – until he gets rid of the rest
Until they take the offer
The money – and they can release them from their contracts

He never talks about it — my father His *situation*, as he calls it Never talked much anyway — But I know that he is thinking about it

constantly – how they are getting in everywhere the project-makers, the developers, with their fancy conference-hotels and their renovating-sceems Tearing down and building up until it all looks the same

269

DEMOCRACY

The first premise for democracy is that we disagree. Don't you think? And that there are problems to locate and discussions to be had on how to solve them. At the same time, there has to be a certain agreement on what values we share, and while disagreeing and discussing, we have to show respect for one another, and we have to agree upon this respect being essential. That underlying everything we do, are some basic human rights. That both humans and animals has an undisputed value in themselves. Sometimes I think that we consist of layers. Layers of different values and actions. And that they form the bases for our choices, both as collective and individuals.

And then the question is – how does these two things play together?

Say – that we are – really concerned with animal welfare, and at the same time we keep on eating meat. And that we can state that we are for animal welfare, at the same time as we eat meat from animals that we know has been mistreated. Its like our actions constantly work for or against our basic values. Sometimes they match, but its like a lack of logic there sometimes, don't you think? Do you think? Or am I just talking rubbish?

270

IS ANY OF IT REAL

Look at this

Look at this!

Is any of this real?

271

OWL 1

Well that's an owl, a great owl

And it's on the end of a space rocket

The rocket is set off to space from the launch pad

which is in Cape Canaveral, Florida – in the middle of this enormous wasteland – from which it sets off

And how we got to the wasteland – we started from the mediaeval door

I felt secure there

I was asked to find a place like that – and I did – and from this safe place – I cross the square and come to this house that is about to fall off a cliff

It does not exactly fall off the cliff into the wasteland – and I don't really know what it is – that space between the house and the cliff and the wasteland

Nor can I explain how I got from one place to the other

But I am there – in this wasteland – and I find myself – or one find oneself in the space –

centre, the launch pad-area where the rocket takes oooooof – and takes the owl into space.

The owl would be sitting on top of a telegraph-pole or - at a high place, but for some reason it is not

a telegraph-pole

It's a space rocket

And I am not - I am not anything

I am just an observing

Watching all of this happening

A somewhat frightened observer - because it's all a bit disconcerting

All very strange and worrying

A little bit intimidating, but there is a feeling of hurry – and I am running across the wasteland

Towards the cliff

But I don't know what happens then

I have no idea

727

OWL 2 IMPRO

All owls are very mysterious

They are difficult to guess – they give the impression

Of commanding the whole environment from high up and with an absolute minimum of movement a real

Economy of using virtually no energy - they just

Move their head a little bit – off course

It just rotates

The head of an owl – it just rotates without you even knowing if it really has a neck or not Just turning around – surveying the environment really quietly – not – not

Alarming any possible pray that might be in the environment so – commanding the environment so that any

Life

Any – other animal life or birdlife that's within a 150 meters of the owl is basically conscious that the owl is there – cause it could loose anything

A rabit or a dog or anything — could basically they could basically loose anything their lives — if they do anything wrong with an owl hanging around — up at the top of a pole — But since the owl is actually on the space rocket it kind of looses some of its

some of its natural power

cause

that's not really a place where owls probably wants to be – on the top of a space rocket I think its forced to go out there – probably against is own will ...

And everything is moving much faster -I mean - that it ever would have wanted to be moved - sooooo - so its not a natural situation for the owl - if one compares with its natural invironment

273

THE DEATH OF THE HONEY BEES

Like – I read it in the paper – this Sunday morning – it said that the honey bees had started to die in massive numbers.

All the hives. Died on the spot, totaling about 2.5 million bees.

A woman stated on facebook – that walking through the farm was like waking through a graveyard. Pure sadness

279

CLOSING-TIME

They are closing down the factory

They are closing down the works

They are closing down the yard

The mill

The diner

No I went down there today They gates were locked

The door was looked

They've barricade it

You could walk right in

It was all gone

The machines, the shelfs, the storage All empty

280

DEPRESSION

70,000 abandoned buildings, 31,000 empty houses, and 90,000 vacant lots

281

GIVE ME MY KEYS!

Give me my keys!
Give me my keys
Give them to me!
Just give me my keys
Give me my keys My keys – Give them to me!

282

HE JUST SHOUTS

My neighbor – He is no problem really
He just shouts
Like shouts
really loud
over and over again

like the same phrase – Just like: Give it here. Give me my keys! like 40 times in different voices and I sit there, in my living room, and I listen to him. My wife likes it less than I do. It kind of scares her, the way he just goes on and on. I guess it's because she's pregnant. She worries about the child. About whether this is the right kind of environment for our child to grow up in Sometimes I go down. To the basement. You can hear them even better down there The way they carry on I sit there on the washing machine - and sometimes I see him - like driving off in the middle of the night. And his wife there on the lawn in her rubber boots or in her bathrobe knee deep in snow.

283

WE LIT A FIRE IN THE BASEMENT

284

THE GOVERNMENT

A there are killings again Up in the hills Down by the river

B It's nothing It's the government Go back to sleep

A
I heard it
I heard it all true the night

B
Its just target practise
Its just some kids fooling about

A They are doing it Going from house to house You'll see

В -

A
The dogs went wild with barking
I think they have killed everybody
Like the gangs used to
Soon they'll go around
burning down the houses

RUBBISH

All that rubbish Big plastic bags full of it How can one person manage to produce so much junk	
	286
RATS	
Rats Worse than rats – the lot of them	
	287
CLOCKS, STEAM ENGINES, CAT-FOOD, RIFLES AND BULLETS	
	288
FUCK THOSE BLOODY POLES	
	289
90 000	
90 000	
90 000 workers	
	290
CLOSING US DOWN	
Version 1: They are closing us down	
Version 2: They are closing it down	
	291
THE OWNERS	
A Why says that?	

Say what!

A

That they are closing it down

R

What do you mean?

A

Who are they?

They who?

292

SELF MEDICATION

working with animals, I'm just so fucking tired.
It's not the animals – it's the people. They self-medicate.
I want to go to Alabama. Raise horses, start a farm down there.
All my Family is from down there – you know. Back when they came – Always loved horses.

There used to be a stable down here. The house is still there. I used to go there as a child. I was the only black person. I thought that there were no black jockeys but then I learned that in the South, before the ku klux klan went through it all – all the prize winning jockeys were black.

293

THE HATERS

They used to be hating on us. Now they are all coming down here. in their cars.

They can't even cross the streets. They can't even walk.

I mean now they all say they support the team — in that time, when the stadium was down there — now we all go to the games, now when they are winning. But then — there were hardly any at the games. When they were one dollar a seat and you could bring your own food.

I remember like, when I was four, and my mother had brought me that new shiny jacket, you know that team jacket, and we went down there, and we walked over that overpass and it was a summers day and I was all proud and all.

294

THE PIANO

He does not do anything anymore
He just sits up all night – playing that piano
And now they are coming to get it
He picked it up when he got that job – but then he never payed for it

THE KEY

Do you have it? The key?

296

TICK TOCK

We think that we've got'n rid of it

We think we've stashed it away in the attic and then it keeps on reappearing in the living room

It's like this alarm clock ticking

You can put it under your pillow, in the cupboard, but it keeps on ticking

Tick tock

Tick tock

Tick tock

297

THE ONE-HANDED SHRINK

This shrink I started going to, he does not have a hand He has like – not even half a hand So he puts forward this stump And you grab it And it's like the most beautiful thing

298

COME ON. YOU ARE HOLDING ME UP HERE!

299

A LITTLE BOY RUNNING

You hear him their little boy running and Running running and Running across the floor

300

DO YOU HAVE IT

Do you have it? The car?

 $3\,0\,1$

SHAME

The fact that you don't own your own words! Not even your feelings That they are not original That they are/feel even made

They create shame

They come from society, from our parents – they create shame We fight
With this self-censorship

302

BEHIND THE HOUSE (while writing on a computer)

We are growing corn again now And apples and pears and grapes And my neighbour he has bees Beehives Behind his house and on the ceiling

303

THE HUSBAND

My neighbor she really want to be like us you can see it in her face

And her husband
He plays a lot of footballgames
And he has this small office and she knows
That he will never make this amount of money
To get the house of her dreams — That her friends has
And I meet her even in the shop
Or I meet her on the doorstep

And she tells me everything I met him on the boat The husband And he was going to Poland On a guttetur

And he says We are going to Auschwitz on Sunday if we are not to drunk on Saturday

Its so hard – he says

After so many years With my wife things no sex

304

IT'S PSYCHOLOGICAL

A
I don't know
In a way it's his problem, isn't it?

В

Sure it's his problem – but now it's mine too

A

I think it's psychological

R

Off course it's psychological

Α

Maybe you should talk to somebody Maybe you need like

a third party?

В

Yeah

Α

Yeah

В

-

Yeah

Α

I think so

В

A third party

_

Some friends of ours decided to go to this shrink And they wanted him to be an older man You know – wise maybe, or experienced And they found this old man Who kind of look like her dad, and she liked that

And

He was a couple therapist

A family counselor

And he was like 65

And now they go there like every week

And she says

It sort of become a part of their lives

It does not solve anything, she says – but it's like a ritual

Like family

A

Ah – isn'that lovely

В

I don't know

I mean, he isn't family - they pay him

Α

I think you need something like that Some stability, some continuity She also told me – that he only has one hand Like when they came there, and he came to the door – she discovered that he only had one The other hand was like gone Just a stump – and I don't know I just couldn't deal with that 305 FALLING SEQUENCE 1: What happened? 2: He fell 2: Did he fall? 4: What's up? 5: He fell 6: Who fell? 7: He just lies there 8: Get him up Whats wrong with you! Somebody get him up! 306 DARLING Look at me Darling look at me 307 IT'S THE LATEST MODEL Do you like it? It's the latest model Is it the colour you like

Powder blue

It will take us straight across town

Straight across town — no waiting around in that tramline anymore

HE HAS THE NICEST CAR ...

309

WATCH OUT FOR THE TRAM!

310

YOU ARE HURTING ME

Let go of my hand No Let go of my hand You're hurting me

311

THE BOYS SWIMMING

No they went swimming The boys in the river run after them just take this lunch-box and this apple and run

run and you'll catch up with them

312

CARD-PLAYING

The police came around
They'd been card-playing I thought
That's what he said
We've been card-playing all night — he said, but I don't know
They came and took him
God knows when he'll get out

313

THE MEMBRANE

It's like a membrane, an invisible skin that is hard — to penetrate — to find you voice in — in the society. Not just to live at the edge of it. Surviving by it — but not really beeing in it. Not being able to influence it — or criticise it.

314

I WANT TO GO TO WARSAWA

I want to go to Warszawa
Play the piano
Were one of those dresses
One of those long sleeveless dresses
I dream of it at night
Me
In a lit up street back there where my folks came from
Playing
Letting the music pour out through an open window

316

THE VAN

In the van

I can't

She can't She's pregnant She's five months pregnant Its January

Down to the street below ...

In the van
You can't be serous

They've cut the electricity They've changed the locks It's not yours anymore Jim Jim

Jim

Its not your house anymore
It hasn't been — if you don't pay
it hasn't been for years

317

JUST SHUT UP

Just shut up
Just shut up
Just shut up about that van
About that dog
About the government
About your dress
About that school
What school
What fucking school
Do you think I can pay for a school
I can't even pay for petrol
I can't sleep
I haven't slept

This car
This car
This car
It's the nicest colour but it's not a fucking house
It's not a fucking house
This is not fair
This is not fair
This is not human
We are not supposed to live like this!!!

318

THE RULER

I had this ruler. This ruler that I really loved And it had all these faces on it All the presidents faces – and I loved that ruler so much I thought I would be like them one day that I would be a president and it was not until later I could have been six maybe, or seven when I noticed when I saw that they were not like me that they were different their faces - not like my face That they were men, and that I was not And I wanted to be one a man like my father or a boy like my brother

I loved my brother and I could not believe it how all how all of them could be men and I was not

319

SHIT

shit shit shit

shit shit shit shit

shit shit shit fuck this shit

320

HOLD ME

Please hold me Just for a minute 322

YOU OVER THERE

Can I help you with anything?

323

ANIKA IMPRO

1.

No it wasn't
No – it wasn't
No. It wasn't. osv

2.

Nei – va då? Nei, det va det inte. Nei de va det inte Nehehe i de va det inte osv

Va det det? Nei – va då?

3.

It wasn't what —
It wasn't what?
It wasn't osv

4.

Vad va de inte? Vå da? Vad va det inte Vad va det inte? VAD va det inte? Osv

Det va inte vad då? Vilket va det inte? Vad va det inte för nånting?

Det va inte vad?

5.

Are you sleepy?
Are you sleepy?
Osv
Are you asleep?

6.

Sover du? Är du sovnig? År du sövnig – etc

(whispers) sover du? Sover du — Nnnnn — hhhnnnn (hums)

_

IT IS YOUR OWN FAULT

I mean
If you can't be successful it's your own fault
I mean it
That's what they say
That's what people say
And if you're not — it's like this disease
This contagious disease you carry around with you
Wherever you go

When the society solves your problems and its own, you are left on your own with your problem.

— The fear that there is something wrong with me if I can't function inside these frameworks.

The only thing that can go wrong is you

325

LET'S TALK ABOUT SOMETHING ELSE

Don't listen to me
Do not listen to me
Lets talk about something else
Something else completely
Like

squirrels.

Black squirrels.
They came with the carnival one time,
When a carnival came by my town and they had black squirrels and they spread,
And then they have been mating - so you see a lot of back squirrels with brown tales there now and sometimes, there is this orchestra.
They follow what they call the organ trail, and they play in the field in the spring

326

DO YOU WANT TO PUT YOUR HEAD IN MY LAP

327

THE CADILLAC

I remember him riding a Cadillac
I remember him smoking on the balcony
I remember him having this video camera
That he made like tons of tons of takes with it
Of everything
Of almost everything
Of us
Taking trips
Going in the park

His car
He loved his car
I remember him filming the scenery
He used to film the houses and the streets
How he used to follow me around with the camera
filming everything I did
all the time
I used to love that
he used to say — look at me!
He used to say — turn around and twirl!
I used to perform for him

328

BLIND

Sometimes it feels like I'm going blind

I cannot see

When I try to look ahead

It is just gone - obliterated

329

I NEVER MENT TO HURT YOU

No – don't say that It's not true I never meant to hurt you

330

I USED TO SEE THE BEAUTY IN THE WORLD

 $3\,3\,1$

THAT'S IT

I've never been able to say no

That's it

I just never -

332

I HAVE BEEN UP ALL NIGHT

Look

Look

Look

I've been up all night

Up all night – with those bloody papers

With those number

No No

No – we can't work it out

It's nothing to work out

It's over

No more tweeking, fixing, no more avoidance -

Yes

Yes

I told you

It's over

They'll put us under administration

Tomorrow In a week

In a months time – but it will happen

There is no avoiding it

333

THE CONTRACT

See

There is the contract

334

LAWRENCE-QUOTE

the machine is a soft thing, it needs us

We are not the centre

We are a part of thermodynamic processes

We are the producers of technology – of hot words, and cold matter Maybe we have the potential to deal with it all \dots

325

A TRIBE

It's like a tribe This government It's like a very corrupt tribe

336

I DON'T BELIEVE IN POLITICS ANYMORE

337

FIFTH FLOOR

I live on the fifth floor
I grow lemon trees in my windowsill, and apple trees and tomatoes
I take the kernels out of the fruit and then I plant them there
I've also tried to plant an avocado, ginger and apricot

THE HOUSE

Α

So it's yours

The house on the other side of the street

В

Yes

Α

I didn't know

I thought that it was owned buy a guy who was leaving for Florida

F

It was

Jimmy something

he offered me to buy it

but I didn't first

I would never touching any property with tenants on it

and the women who lived there, Charleen – she was like bipolar

and then he said she had to get out

but it took him two months to get rid of her

from May to July

and then I bought the place, and this woman - Charleen - moved further up street

ironically enough renting

With another white guy - called Kyle

and now

after she left

the house is twice the price

nobody wants to live close to lunatics and killers and crack heads - but we all have to live

somewhere

and now she hates everything in Horton street

Charleen

Sometimes she comes around

In the middle of the night

And she just stand there

Outside the house

Screaming

Swearing

Calling me names

Threatening that she will kill me

Calling me a Polish, fascist, racist pig

she even hates the farm and all it represents

she attacked the farmer two weeks ago

with a sledgehammer

Α

And the house?

Are you going to keep it?

В

I don't know

if I get the right offer, I might sell

I NEVER SAID THAT

No!

No!

No!

No, I never said that

Shut the fuck up! Just give me the keys! Give me the keys

340

YOU DON'T EVEN KNOW ME

341

They took us to that building that had just been sold for one million dollars to the guy who has that company — Cost and Credit, and inside it — there was this cathedral-like, heavily ornamented communal area, like ten floors high from the ground level, drawn by some of the world's best architects at the time, I mean the city was just overflowing with cash back then ...

342

LOCK IN

I can't stand it any longer In two months time it will be five years since I last left this building

343

THE ARGUMENT

These last week we have been arguing Constantly

We have bought this new flat

This penthouse

This rooftop garden

This ocean view and now he wants to get rid of it all

All the furniture

All the family portraits

Even the TV

He says it makes no sense anymore

All those things we have loved and cherished

That generations have loved and cherished since we are moving

Into this new flat

He says that when we pay so much for the view

For the space

For the vicinity

that that

Will have to do

IT WAS IN THE PAPERS

345

IT WAS IN THE NEWS

346

NEVER BELIEVE IT

347

A WORLD THAT VOTES BREXIT

A world that votes Brexit and Trump, and kicks refugees, and watches them drown in the sea. A world that turns its blind eye on barrel bombs, extreme torture, enhungerment, genocide... A world like this is an accessory to genocide

In a just world, all of your presidents and prime ministers will also be facing some kind of international court for justice, for being accessories to murder. I no longer think I am human... we have all become barbarians (Rana Issa on Facebook)

348

THE WORLD GOING TO THE DOGS

It's not true you know.

It's not true what they say – that the worlds is going to the dogs.

It is a lie.

A shitty lie.

Don't you ever believe it

Don't you believe a word of it. They want you to believe it, but never you believe it – We are fine. Just fine, I promise you. It's just scare tactics – You need to understand – there are countries on all levels, and most of them are ok. People are vaccinated

The number of children in the world has stopped. Stopped increasing.

Most people use contraceptives. They say –

Mr Trump

on the news

They say there is war, chaos, unrest -

-No

No, no, no, no -

That's wrong. You are wrong. They are wrong! Straight up wrong!

There are a fantastic elections, competent leaders. Yesterday India was declared free from tetanus, Nigeria has a fast economic growth and - if one chooses to - If one chooses to only show the shoe, my shoe - it's a very ugly shoe - but that shoe is only a part of me.

I am telling you.

I know.

I am a doctor.

I have been everywhere

I am having a shitty day, but the world is ok and I am telling you that if you choose to only show my ugly shoe – OR if you choose to show something else – like – my face, that's different thing. You only can't only show a small part and call that "the world".[iii]

THE WALK

I decided to walk straight across town
From the old slaughterhouse and then just continue west
All the way through Newtown and the upper district — not stopping
Just do drink — and eat maybe once a day
I decided to walk all the streets
To circle town
See how long it would take me
Sleep as little as possible

I do one street at the time
Circle them on the map
the one I've walked and the once I'll do next
Once all the madhouses and all the jails was outside town
Now the city is catching up with them

350

A WORLD BUILD ON FANTACY

Is any of it real?

Look at this

Look at this!

A world built on fantasy

Synthetic emotions in the form of pills

psychological warfare in the form of advertising

Mind-altering chemicals in the form of food

Brainwashing seminars in the form of media

Cold isolated bobbles in the form of social networks

Real?

You want to talk about reality?

We have not lived in anything remotely close to reality since it turn of the century

We turned it off

Took out the batteries

Snacked on a bag of gmo's while we toss the reality into any

ever expanding dumpsters of the human condition

we live in houses build by trademarks corporations

built on bipolar numbers

jumping up and down on digital displays

Hypnotizing us into the biggest slumber mankind have ever seen

You have to dig pretty deep, kiddo

We live in the kingdom of bullshit

A kingdom you've lived in for far too long

I am no more real than a big mac

As far as you are concerned

I am very real

We are all together now

Whether you like it or not (Mr Robot)

351

THE DOG

And our dog it just keeps on barking There is no way we can -It just barks and barks every time anybody moves sits down stands up if the light shifts or a car passes in the night It's such a light sleeper Somebody turning on a light going to the toilet opening a door – it just sets it off and then it can keep it going for hours But my other nneighbours the ones just across the street They have children, a tiny child and all, and sooner or later they will complain They will call or come over and tell us that the dog That it's impossible with that dog And then One night I wake up and the house is all lit up Every room the hallway even the garage like this bright, whitish light A helicopter landing on the parking lot the rotors spinning whipping up the snow

352

LIPSTICK ON A WHORE

- the city, the main street - before, I wouldn't even stop at red Now its safe - although some of it is like putting lipstick on a whore

THIS HAS NOTHING TO DO WITH US

Don't cry

This has nothing to do with us

354

PRODUCTION

You want me to say it

What the this town has been producing?

What hasn't been producing: china, candles, and cars. Canned sausages, canned beef, canned beans. Bier and bonnets. Bomb-carriers. Tanks and toys and lumber. And lard. And meatloaf's

Stoves, and salt, and ships, and spirits Sports-ware, pharmaceuticals, paper, pens, upholstery. Tobacco, tupperware,

furniture and furnaces

Do you want me to go on?

355

IT WAS GONE

I walked through my old neighborhood, and it was gone Just gone

356

DO YOU HAVE A JOB SEQUENCE

1:

Well, you have a job

2:

Well – now you have a job

3:

Well –

Do you have a job?

4:

Well – if you don't have a job

5:

Well, if you can't hold down a job...

6:

Well – when there are no jobs –

7.

Did you get that job?

8:

No job's eh?

9: When you lost that job	
10: But you lost that job	
11: Better hold on to that job	
	357
WORKING So brother – Are you working?	
	358
WHERE ARE YOU GOING?	
	359
YOU'RE GOING NOWHERE	
	360
IT'S NOTHING	
	361
AH	
Oh – no – Further down	
Ah – that's lovely!	
	362
IT'S TRUE I never meant to hurt you	
	363
I´VE BEEN UP	
Look Look Look I've been up all night	
18	
	364

BANCKRUPSY

Yes

Yes

I told you
It'over
Tomorrow
In a week
In a months time — but it will happen
There is no avoiding it

365

JUST RIGHT HERE

366

TAXATION IN SPACE

A

What do you think about taxation in space?

В

_

Α

Taxation.

In space.

В

I don't

Α

You know they are planning for it.

It's the resources – metals and minerals and all kinds of stuff.

They say that that's the next race. The race to colonialize – you know – space. After the race for water – its space, they say, – and then they need rules you see – and regulations – to have them ready. To put down some principles – on how to tax

the revenue.

В

Α

I know –

I know that -

That when you look up. When you stand there and look up at the sky, like – the night sky and the moon – In Marysville – It can be really spectacular. In winter. When it has snowed and the coyotes are out and you just stand there – You've gone camping or something and you just stand there and look up at the sky and the stars and you can hear them yelping in the distance, and the stars are like tiny diamond dots high, high above you – like tiny pinpoint holes in the sky – and the sky is so black that it embellishes all, so all you can do is just feel the pull, the pull from those holes you know – as if they are entrances or something. Tiny entrances to something – better – or lighter – just something bright. And you can feel your soul, literally your soul being pulled up there, like – all the way up there from your toes and your fingertips and the roots of your hair and you do not think about it then – I mean that is not what's in the forefront of your mind right then, looking at the night sky, – I mean: taxation.

No, keep the lights on Keep the lights on so I can look at you

368

BLAST OUT

A Sunday morning, at 10.30 — this man starts going bananas at the main squeer Shooting at anything in sight. I mean anything. Not people but signs and busses, and commercials and doves and even the tram as it passes

369

I DON'T READ THE PAPERS ANYMORE

370

WHAT N EWS?

371

BILLS

I cannot pay my bills
I don't have a car
I couldn't drive it if I had one

372

I SAW IT MYSELF

373

SHE SAID SO

374

THE GOLEM

C

I dreamt that we found this giant, this golem – that also was a machine A kind of robot

deep inside the thickets at the back of the park

there where the drunks hang out

First I thought was just a small hill

All overgrown, and in the dream that felt all natural, as if it had always been there – but inside that hill, hidden under leaves and branches it lay

As if sleeping

R

Why do you call it a golem?

C

I don't know

It was a person

home-made

Crafted in a way
Put together by different parts and it was so big
His left eye had fallen out and lay there on the ground
blinking at me

We found this door, and when we entered – it was all dark inside And then we saw something giving off a faint light

В

_

C

It looked like an enormous cupboard Or an archive of some sort a series of interconnected shelves and drawers I think they were filled with voices

В

Stories

C

No, just voices Just people talking Whispering

I think they where whispering

Confessing

Talking about roads leading nowhere

About an aunt

A shop selling paper

Someone found dead face down in a bathroom in a derelict building

About different types of ice cream

About a house with 11 rooms and one child for each room

and about a theatre

long gone

Torn down

Demolished and all the performances that used to go on there

And there was a voice talking about her grandfather, that had this hollowed out walking stick, a walking stick with a secret room just for stashing away silkworms, for smuggling, back then, in a previous century

And about this architect

that built this skyscraper with all these balconies – and when he had finished building it he went up to the top one

the top balcony

and then he just

jumped

And there were talks about underwater subway-systems and soft cars

and runaway brides

and about this boy that dressed himself up in clouds

And in one of the drawers was this map showing all the possible and impossible hiding-places any town could offer

В

_

I never dream anything anymore
I'm just out like light and then I'm awake again

SHUT YOUR FACE!

376

LOST

Have you ever been lost? Like totally fucking lost Like –

out there

and

real like

really lost and scared

Nothing fake

Real fear!

Full on

pure

just -

I wanted that

I just wanted to feel that – just once

and it was late September

at my mothers summerhouse

in the woods

and nobody knew I was there

that late in the season

And I had this plan

That I would just walk

I would just leave the place and start to walk and then continue until it got dark

And then I would leave the path

And I would just keep on walking

away from the cottage

away from the path and there

deep in the woods

I would face my fears

Soon

I couldn't see a thing

Soon

it was like pitch black out there – and I said to myself

watch your steps

watch your steps Ann Helen

and I thought: shit

Shit

Shit, shit, shut – this is like really, really dark

And I thought, fuck – why didn't I bring a mag-light or something?

and I went on like that for a while

crashing into branches, stumbling around in the moss and I was getting nowhere and I

though

this is stupid

and it was getting colder

and I thought

this is pointless without a mag-light

you are going to hurt yourselves - and I decided to go it back and get one

but instead of going down back through the valleys as I planned

there was no valley

I ended up in this marshland

I didn't even know there was marshland in that area

and I stood there

```
deep in the marsh
just out on this glen
and there was this moon
and a glimmering of water somewhere
and this darkness
and it was breathing
I thought
This darkness
This darkness is breathing like an animal and I thought, -
           this isn't right
and I turned left, or at least in the direction I was supposed to be going
- but I still couldn't find my way
I was still there in the wet
Under the branches, and I got that feeling, that feeling I had as a kid when you just stand
there, like – lost, in nature – and your heart is pounding and you just think FUCK THIS
SHIT ...and I said to myself - what the hell do you think you are doing out here? What the
hell do you think you are doing out here in the dark - on your own - in the middle of the
night, - you asshole-artist-face-your-fears-get-lost-in-nature-shit! And I just was
Most of all for stumbling upon something, a corps or something
Mainly a corpse
Or
                things
lurking in the woods
a killer or a wolf or something -
And, I said to myself
you know
you know Ann Helen - this -
this
is just
                    NOT GOOD
And Why didn't you tell anybody where you where going?
Why didn't you ask if somebody to come and pick you up?
Now nobody is going to pick you up
Now nobody knows that you are even here!!!
Do you hear me?
Do you hear me you face
                               your
                                                fears
get
             lost
in nature
cunt-face
assole
idiot-artist-shit
short pause
And there were sounds
sounds in the undergrowth
I heard them
I could not see them, but I could hear them – and I said – as loud as I could – Ja!
Ja!
Ja!
Ok –
Ok-
Ok – So what are you waiting for?
So what are you waiting for?
Ok!
                  Just eat me – just finish me off –
                  wolf, badger, fox
```

Come on!

(in a low voice - repeating herself) Wolf, badger, fox

Short pause

And it's so dark that your eyes hurt You cannot see clearly, but you can smell it the fear Waiting for you fear was all that was

377

JUST GET ME OUT OF THIS

378

THE MEETING

I was going to this meeting — I'd finally managed to get this meeting, — and they had asked me to be there by half past five and I knew as soon as they'd suggested it, that they were not giving me the time of day — because everybody gets ready to leave the office at five o'clock. And I kept thinking — that gives me half an hour, that gives us half an hour, and *that* is a *very* short meeting.

I mean, people have a life – I get that.

Even I feel like leaving the office at five –

And I get there – and I stand there – and I can't get in. I am stuck between two doors. You need the code to get through the second one – so I have to wait there until somebody can come and get me. And when they finally come they are all flustered and they say – great to see you, reeeeeeally great to see you, but could you just hold on for a minute, we are closing up a meeting with so and so, – who is like a real player.

- Could you just hang around here for a while?
- Just grab yourselves a cup of coffee, and then I stand there, and it's soon 16.35, and when they finally gets out of the office, we all have to say hi, and how nice to see you, and what are you up to these days and all that. And before we have managed to sit down there is only 17 minutes left.

17 minutes.

17 minutes - and I sit there - and I listen - and one of them is having this endless monologue, explaining to me how much they would have loved to work with me, but why and how that is just not possible at the moment and that they really, really would have loved to make this happen, and how special I am, - and what an asset I am, - and I say, ok. OK - if you do not have the time, you do not have the time, and they end up compensating me with bringing up an alternative, like cash, - and it's not bad. The cash. It is just not what I came for. And they promise me this cash, and I don't know what to say, and I realise that I have a headache, and that I feel kind of - All of a sudden I feel nauseous, and rejected, and invaded, and disappointed, and pissed off and grateful at the same time. And when I leave there, when I leave them, I just feel like hitting something.

I mean, we had talked about this They'd agreed, made promises – We were going to do this together I had thought they were interested I had made plans!

Long pause

And I stand there
And I can hear them talking
And I know that I should be grateful
After all, they have given me all this cash
And at the same time:

What the fuck is wrong with them! Are they complete idiots! How can they?!? Are they just completely braindead? What the fuck is wrong with them!

Long pause

And you stand there
And you can't get in
You just have to wait
You don't know the code
You just have to wait until somebody comes down and get you

Long pause

And you stand there And you wait And you can hear them

And soon there is only 17 minutes left

379

DEPRESSION 2

70,000 buildings, 31,000 houses, 90,000 vacant lots

380

THIRTEEN ACRES

thirteen acres we cultivated that year thirteen acres six acres of wheat five acres of rye then tomatoes and sweet peas and herbs

we are taking over the coal-yard now down in Greek town planning on ploughing fresh ground for potatoes and cabbage and this new single-mothers-program taking people down from the north and from up the river

381

WE'RE GOWING CORN AGAIN

382

MY SISTER DOES IT

No, they've started doing it My sister does it they grow tomatoes, and carrots, and some greens sometimes,

you know.

Somewhere over at Midtown I can't remember the name of the place –

but there was this neighbourhood

and there is just no one around anymore

all the houses just -

So they have this program,

a single mothers program,

and they take them there,

in busses

and they grow tomatoes,

and vegetables,

and all sorts of stuff.

and feed it to their kids, you know.

So they won't – get deficiencies and shit.

And she does that

All that gardening - on the balconies

and the rooftops.

In the front yard of some of the houses.

And one of them is kind of hers.

Somebody had just left the place and now she can do what she likes with it – they had

tomatoes growing there and bees for honey and all

She says she wants to grow flowers

Sell them at the market

383

NO VOICE

I can't stay here – like this

It's like - if somebody

Just anybody at all as much as open his or her mouth, or walk funny or look at you

Just as much as look at you

You feel like bashing their face in

You feel like bashing their faces in

You do

You feel like loosing it

You feel like shouting

Shut the fuck up!

You feel like whispering

I'll make your life fucking chaos

You feel like grabbing them by the hair

Stepping on their hands

Putting your thumbs on their eyeballs

You feel like spitting in their faces

You feel like sitting on their stupid face

You feel like jumping on their souls

You are jumping on their soul, their faces, their hands

You don't want to kill them - you want to destroy them, reduce them, beat them into pulp

And you keep on kicking

And you just keep on kicking

Stepping on them

On that pulp

On that mess of meat and blood and nails and knees and hair

Until there is nothing

Until there is less than nothing

Until they're gone

THAT FEELING

That feeling When you stand there Bent behind 7 – 11 Puking you guts out

385

DICKS!

They can just sit there in that dried out armpit that they call work and jerk themselves off into oblivion!

Dicks!

386

YOUR MUM'S GONNA DIE

Your mum's gonna die Your dads's gonna to die Your grandmothers gonna die Your dogs gonna die

387

THE GANGS ARE MOVING SOUTH AGAIN

They say the gangs are moving south That the streets here soon will be safe again – all along the green corridor And over to the market

That it's going to be alright
That we are going to be alright
That this town is going to be alright
That we all – all of us
That it's all going to be fine

388

NO PLAN

No

No

That's not true

I never planned it like that

No

That's not on me

No

That's on you

It's on you I say This ones on you

That's your fucking mess

I know I know

I know

Yes - We all know!

Just make sure its alright, ok?
Just make sure it stays like the holy mother of mercy — blessedly unfucked

389

THIS IS IT

This is it
This is it
This is fear
This is real fucking fear
Full on
pure
fucking —
just
full on fear

390

I CAN NOT

I cannot live in this house all alone
I cannot take on all that responsibility
I cannot take care of Lee and Leoni
I don't know how to do it
I don't know how to pay the bills
I couldn't drive a car if I had done

I am afraid of the dark
I don't know what came over me
I don't know what came over me
I don't know what came over me
I don't want to do this anymore

391

THE CRISIS

When the crisis happened I was completely shocked about how it effected me - I just kept on running to the TV and another bank had gone - down, and I could not use my card, my credit card and people started to make fun of my country, and I - I had been the one doing that, making fun of my country - And then I had to tell them, and be vulnerable and tell him - this guy that was making the jokes - That: I am really worried I am really worried about my grandparents About my mother About my friends About me

BANG!

BANG!

You get it over with

You starts shooting
At random first
then more methodically
You pace yourselves
You seek higher ground
It feels good
It feels nesecarry
It feels like this is all that is

393

THE ORDER

I would like a pad thai without prawns 23 Number 23

394

BUTTERFLY-WEED

Oh no, not like that

We bottle them, you know – the honey – all golden and sweet, in thus 9-fluid-ounce jars.

The butterfly weed – You know

They are showy bright orange

and with dark green narrow leaves.

The butterflies like them. They like them especially. Like the Monarch. The Monarch does. It attracts them.

The Swallowtail Butterflies and the monarch Joey pye weed 4-8', with loads of mauvepink flowers

and the purple cone flower

and columbine - in blue, white, yellow and pink

Then there is bee balm, Black eyed Susan, Trillium – Evening primrose and all kinds of flowers

395

GREEN CITY

That's what they call it

Green city

I've never seen anything like it

Freeways, and skyscrapers, and meth-heads, and hookers, and pawnshops, and corn

Acres of it

Right there in the middle of the urban spread

The sound of crickets, and pheasants, and a fox barking

And then every now and then a gunshot

Researchers have found that the 'crust' (or outer layers) of a neutron star has the same shape as our cellular membranes. This could mean that, despite being fundamentally different, both humans and neutron stars are constrained by the same geometry

397

SOFT SHELLS ON WHEELS

My uncle has this repairshop in an old casino and at the back Fusing cars with modern technology, making these bat-mobiles that people surf around in these days Like softs shells on wheels

398

ELECTRICITY

And at the top of the old helicopter-deck by the hospital Some people are trapping wind in these huge sails like floating, bouncing, brilliant white spheres

For fun I thought at first
But now
Now I think I've sassed it out
I think it's for energy
Catching energy straight out of the air
Producing lights
Lighting up thousands of little led-lights in the evening – down in that old swimming pool
When everybody just gets together and gets down to it dancing and making a lot of noise

399

A NEW EARTH

So what do we know -Some say they have found a new earth In space Floating around out there – just like us

400

END MONOLOGUE

and behind the heavy cover of clouds and the snow that might still be falling, the sky is littered with tiny, tiny speckles. All the way above the cloud cover, high above the atmosphere. Littered with suns, and firestorms, and galaxies, and twin planets. With moons and asteroid belts and strange electrified phenomenon's, and patterns resembling brainwaves maybe, or our nerve systems, all lit up and alive. And far far away, really out there, deep in the deepest space everything keep on swirling ever so slowly. Swirling and sparkling and glimmering like gold dust. There it is. Strange symmetric swirling patterns of pulsating gold dust all lit up in the dark – all lit up –

[[]i] Chaudhuri – Una: 1 Land/Scape/Theatre and the New Spatial Paradigm page 23, University of Muchigan Press 2000

 $[[]ii] \ https://web.resist.ca/{\sim} kirstena/pageunderground.html$

[[]iii] Hans Rossling